

**THE ROLE OF METROPOLITAN POLICE DEPARTMENT IN
CRIME PREVENTION: CASE STUDY FROM GAUTENG**

by

KWAPENG ELVIS MADIHLABA

submitted in accordance with the requirements

for the degree of

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

in the subject

CRIMINAL JUSTICE

at the

UNIVERSITY OF SOUTH AFRICA

SUPERVISOR: PROF OJ KOLE

SEPTEMBER 2021

COPYRIGHT©

Copyright resides in the University of South Africa and Mr KE Madihlaba. In terms of the Copyright Act 98 of 1978, no part of this material may be reproduced, stored in any retrieval system, be transmitted in any form or be published, redistributed or screened by any means (electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise) without prior written permission from the University of South Africa and KE Madihlaba. However, permission to use in these ways any material in this work that is derived from other sources must be obtained from the original source.

© UNISA 2021

DECLARATION

Student number: **37000888**

I, **KWAPENG ELVIS MADIHLABA**, declare that this thesis: **THE ROLE OF METROPOLITAN POLICE DEPARTMENT IN CRIME PREVENTION: CASE STUDY FROM GAUTENG** is my own work and that all the sources that I have quoted have been indicated and acknowledged by means of complete references.



13 DECEMBER 2021

SIGNATURE

DATE

(KE MADIHLABA MR.)

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to thank myself moreover the almighty God who gave me the strength to finish this qualification. In addition, I would like to acknowledge the support of my family who made it possible for me to achieve this qualification.

To appreciate the support I got from my wife, Naydine Lebogang Madihlaba for untiring support throughout my studies, my children Kamogelo, Gomolemo, Rebaone and Kaboentle Madihlaba and the rest of my relatives and friends.

I would further like to take my earnest and sincerest appreciation to the cities of Tshwane, Ekurhuleni and Johannesburg for permitting me to performing my study. I would also like to thank my supervisor Prof Olaotse John Kole, for always inspiring, giving me hope and positive guidance throughout the study. The study could have not been accomplishment without him.

The Research Directorate at University of South Africa (Unisa) for granting me support funding for my research activities. Staff members of the TMPD, EMPD and JMPD thank you for your non-stop backing, cheering and care. Lastly, many appreciations to the statistician, Suwisa Muchengetwa for the statistical examination on composed statistics for the thesis and Mr Jack Chokwe for editing my thesis.

ACRONYMS

ANC	:	African National Congress
ANOVA	:	Analysis of Variance
BOTF	:	Barack Obama Task Force
CBD	:	Central Business District
CCTV	:	Closed-Circuit Television
CEO	:	Chief Executive Officer
CI	:	Confident Internal
COCT	:	City of Cape Town
CPPT	:	Community Partnership Policing Theory
CPTED	:	Crime Prevention through Environmental Design
CTMM	:	City of Tshwane Metro Municipality
IMATU	:	Independent Municipal Allied Trade Union
IPID	:	Independent Police Investigative Directorate
IDP	:	Integrated Development Plan
EMPD	:	Ekurhuleni Metropolitan Police Department
FETC	:	Further Education and Training Certificate
JMPD	:	Johannesburg Metropolitan Police Department
LGBC	:	Local Government Bargaining Council
MCEO	:	Municipal Chief Executive Council
MPD	:	Metropolitan Police Department
MPS	:	Metro Police Services
MOA	:	Memorandum of Agreement
MEC	:	Member of Executive Council
MPS	:	Metro Police Service
MSA	:	Municipal System Act
NCPS	:	National Crime Prevention Strategy
NGO	:	Non-Governmental Organisation
NDPS	:	National Development Plan
NP	:	National Party
NRTA	:	National Road Traffic Act
OPC	:	Oversight Portfolio Committee

PFMA	:	Public Finance Management Act
RTMC	:	Road Traffic Management Cooperation
SANDF	:	South African National Defence Force
SAPF	:	South African Police Force
SAPS	:	South African Police Service
SCCCPP	:	Safe City Community Safety and Crime Prevention Plan
SWAPOL	:	South West African Police
UK	:	United Kingdom
UNISA	:	University of South Africa
USA	:	United States of America
TCB	:	Tshwane Central Business
TCBD	:	Tshwane Central Business District
NMPC	:	National Municipal Police Chief

DEDICATION

This thesis is dedicated to all:

- Law enforcement officers in government departments, entities and institutions
- Metro police officers who participated in the study.
- Municipal authorities and council conducting crime reduction operations.
- Private security officials, citizens of our society, professionals and our young future-oriented children.

EXECUTIVE SUMMARY

This study examined the role of metropolitan police service (MPS) in crime prevention in Gauteng metropolitan municipalities. The findings of this study could guide the authorities such as legislature, administration, society and business cooperate on how to support the police in reducing anticipated crime threats by exploring metro police division within the metropolitan cities. The findings will further help metro police officers implement crime prevention concepts as they are new security services in South Africa and Africa at large.

The research methodology used in this study were a mixed method consisting of quantitative and qualitative. A total of 45 metropolitan police officers on the senior management level of Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department (TMPD), Ekurhuleni Metropolitan Police Department (EMPD) and Johannesburg Metropolitan Police Department (JMPD) were interviewed in the study. Further 160 survey questionnaires were completed by selected respondents at operational level from all three municipalities in Gauteng.

The study intended to attain the following:

- to outline the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng Province;
- to investigate the effectiveness of the laws regulating the MPD in South Africa and determine the shortcomings relating to MPS in combating and preventing crime;
- to investigate different functions being provided by MPS that could be effective in preventing crime in Gauteng Province;
- to investigate powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in crime combating;
- to identify required resources and training that could effectively assist metro police officers in performing crime prevention role in the Gauteng Province; and
- to provide recommendations based on research findings for the better crime prevention and policing theory/model to deal with crime holistically

between metro police divisions, South African Police Service (SAPS), private security industry and other law enforcement agencies in and out of the Gauteng Province.

Based on the empirical findings, recommendations were drafted that, hopefully, will assist TMPD, EMPD and JMPD to improve in their crime prevention function. It will also, hopefully, contribute towards the introduction and conclusion into the innovation of new policing perceptions, initiatives and notions in preventing crime by using metro police officers within the metropolitan cities. The conclusion of this study will make significant contribution into the functioning of the metro police service, society and other law enforcement agencies with technical expertise to serve the intended policing purpose.

It will further make aware of the contributing factors hampering effective crime prevention role and the recommendations outlining how these factors could be resolved. Above all, the study will also educate other academics with the necessary knowledge to help improve understanding of the role of metro police services. The findings may also be infused in the study guides of security management science to help academics to understand better role of metro police officers in crime combating, reduction and prevention in Gauteng Province of South Africa.

KAKARETŠO YEO E PHAGAMENG

Dinyakišišo tše di sekasekile maphodisa a masepala gahlano le bosenyi mo dimasepaleng tša mo kgaolong ya Gauteng. Dipoelo tša dinyakišišo tše di ka hlahla babusi ba go tshwana le lekgotlatheramolao, batsamaisi, setšhaba le beng dikgwebo go thušana le maphodisa kgahlano le matshošetši a bosenyi mo lefapheng la maphodisa a masepala mo ditoropong-kgolo. Gape gape, dipoelo tša dinyakišišo tše di ka fahlolla maphodisa a masepala go thakgola mananeo a go thibela bosenyi bjalo ka bašireletši ba baswa mo Afrika Borwa le Afrika ka bophara.

Dinyakišišo tše di tšeere lemanoga la go hlakantšha ya dipalopalo le ditšhišinyo tša dipolelo go tšwa go batšeakarolo. Maphodisa a masepala a masomennehlano (45) ao le lego maemong a taolo a ilwe a kgethwa go tšea karolo dinyakišišong tse go tšwa Lefapheng la Maphodisa a Masepala ditoropong tše tharo mo Gauteng – Tshwane, Ekurhuleni and Johannesburg moo monyakišiši a ileng a ba botšiša dipotsišo. Batšeakarolo ba bangwe e bile ba maphodisa a masepala a maemo a fase ba lekgolo masome tshela (160) go tšwa ditoropong tše di kgolo tše tharo mo Gauteng.

Dinyakišišo tše di be di ikemišeditše go fihlelela tše di latelago:

- Go utulla mapheko ao a thibelago twantšho le phokotšo ya bosenyi ka maphodisa a masepala mo Gauteng;
- Go tsitsinkela maatla a melao yeo e bušang maphodisa a masepala mo Afrika Borwa le go utulla mafakodi ka maphodisa a masepala go lwantšha le go fediša bosenyi;
- Go fatolla ditirirelo tše di fapaneng mafapheng a maphodisa a masepala go ba le katlego mo go lwantšheng bosenyi;
- Go fatolla maatla le maikarabelo ao maphodisa a masepala a tshwanetšego goba le ona mo twantšhong ya bosenyi;

- Go budologa mahlo khumanegong ya dišumišwa le tthatlho yeo e ka thušang maphodisa a masepala go dira mešomo ya bona ka botswerere mabadi le go lwantšha bosenyi mo Gauteng.
- Go tla ka maele ao a tlišwang ke dinyakišišo tša go kaonafatša twantšho ya bosenyi ka botlalo magareng ga maphodisa a masepala, Tirelo ya Bophodisa mo Afrika Borwa, lefapheng leo le ikemetšeng la tšhireletso, le makgotla a mangwe a semolao ka gare le kante ga Afrika Borwa.

Go latela dipoelo, maele a ile a ngwalwa ka tshepho ya gore a tla thuša dimasepala tše tše tharo go lwantšha bosenyi. Go lebeletšwe gore dipoelo tše di tla ba le karolo go tlišeng mekgwa ye meswa mo sephodiseng le go lwantšhana le bosenyi mo ditropong-kgolo mabapi le mokgwa wo maphodisa a masepala, setšhaba le mafapheng ka moka a tšhireletso le go lwantšha bosenyi gore di dire mošomo wa bona ka botswerere bjo bogolo.

Dipoelo tsa dinyakišišo tše di tla ba le seabe mo go lemogeng mapheko ao a šitišang go lwantšha bosenyi le go fa maele go rarabolla pharela ye ya bosenyi. Dinyakišišo tse di tla ruta le bafahluši ka tsebo ya maleba go thuša go ba le kwišišo le phurullo ya monagano mabapi le maphodisa a masepala. Dipoelo tša dinyakišišo tše di ka thuša le go hlahla baithuti bjalo ka padi ya tthatlho lefapheng la botsebi ba ditšhireletšo go phurulla menagano ya bona go matlafatša maphodisa a masepala ka tsebo ya go lwantšha, go fokotša le go fediša bosenyi mo Afrika Borwa le mafaseng a mangwe.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

COPYRIGHT©	i
DECLARATION.....	ii
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS	iii
ACRONYMS	iv
DEDICATION	vi
EXECUTIVE SUMMARY	vii
KAKARETŠO YEO E PHAGAMENG	ix
LIST OF TABLES.....	xvii
LIST OF FIGURES.....	xxi
CHAPTER 1: GENERAL ORIENTATION OF THE STUDY	1
1.1 INTRODUCTION	1
1.2 INTEGRATED DEVELOPMENT PLAN	3
1.3 WHITE PAPER ON SAFETY AND SECURITY OF 1998	5
1.4 PROBLEM STATEMENT.....	6
1.5 AIM AND PURPOSE OF THE STUDY	10
1.6 OBJECTIVES OF THE STUDY	11
1.7 THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK.....	11
1.8 RESEARCH QUESTIONS.....	12
1.9 VALUE OF THE STUDY.....	13
1.10 SUMMARY	14
CHAPTER 2: RESEARCH METHODOLOGY	15
2.1 INTRODUCTION	15
2.2 RESEARCH APPROACH.....	15
2.3 THE RESEARCH DESIGN	16
2.3.1 Qualitative research.....	16
2.3.2 Quantitative method.....	17
2.4 POPULATION AND SAMPLING.....	18
2.5 DATA COLLECTION METHODS.....	19
2.6 DATA ANALYSIS.....	20
2.7 VALIDITY, RELIABILITY AND ACCURACY OF COLLECTED INFORMATION.....	20
2.8 ETHICAL CONSIDERATIONS.....	21

2.9 LIMITATIONS OF THE STUDY	23
2.10 SUMMARY	23
CHAPTER 3: LITERATURE REVIEW.....	25
3.1 INTRODUCTION	25
3.2 THE BARRIERS/OBSTACLES TO EFFECTIVE CRIME PREVENTION	26
3.3. LEGAL FAILURES FOR THE METRO POLICE OFFICERS IN CRIME PREVENTION, COMBATING AND REDUCTION IN SOUTH AFRICA	31
3.4 FUNCTIONS AND RESPONSIBILITIES VESTED IN METRO POLICE OFFICERS IN CRIME PREVENTION	34
3.4.1 Traffic Road policing management	37
3.4.2 By-laws execution.....	39
3.4.3 Crime prevention role of metro police.....	41
3.5 DO METRO POLICE IN SOUTH AFRICA REQUIRE ADDITIONAL LEGAL POWERS TO HELP THE SAPS TO COMBAT CRIME?.....	43
3.6 THE REQUIRED TRAINING LEVEL OF METRO POLICE OFFICERS FOR CRIME PREVENTION	46
3.7 RESOURCES AND SPECIALISED SERVICES IN THE METRO POLICE DEPARTMENTS TO COMBAT CRIME	51
3.8 SUMMARY	54
CHAPTER 4: LEGISLATIVE AND THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK.....	56
4.1 INTRODUCTION	56
4.2 STATUTORY FRAMEWORK FOR MPS IN SOUTH AFRICA	57
4.2.1 Criminal Procedure Act No. 51 of 1977 (CPA).....	57
4.2.2 Local Government Bargaining Council (LGBC) by metro police officials.....	58
4.2.3 Controlling body within the Municipal Police Department (MPD)	58
4.2.4 Independent Police Investigative Directorate Act No.1 of 2011 (IPID)	59
4.2.5 Media as a police watchdog	60
4.3 THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK	61
4.3.1 Community Partnership Policing Theory (CPPT).....	61
4.3.2 Obstacles of Community Partnership Policing Theory.....	62
4.3.3 Assessment of Community Policing Partnership Theory	64
4.3.4 SCPT	65
4.3.5 Obstacles of SCPT	66
4.3.6 Assessment of SCPT.....	67

4.3.7 Crime Prevention Through Environmental Design (CPTED)	68
4.3.8 Obstacles of CPTED Theory	69
4.3.9 Assessment of CPTED Theory	70
4.4 SUMMARY	70
CHAPTER 5: QUALITATIVE RESEARCH FINDINGS	72
5.1 INTRODUCTION	72
5.2 BIOGRAPHICAL INFORMATION	74
5.2.1 Gender representative	74
5.2.2 Age categories	75
5.2.3 Race presentation	77
5.3 OBSTACLES HAMPERING EFFECTIVE CRIME PREVENTION BY METRO POLICE SERVICE (MPS)	79
5.4 LEGAL SHORTCOMINGS HAMPERING METRO POLICE CRIME PREVENTION	90
5.5 DIFFERENT FUNCTIONS BEING PERFORMED BY MPS THAT COULD BE EFFECTIVE IN PREVENTING CRIME IN GAUTENG	98
5.6 POWERS AND RESPONSIBILITIES REQUIRED BY METRO POLICE OFFICERS TO BE EFFECTIVE IN CRIME COMBATING	104
5.7 LEVEL OF TRAINING APPROPRIATE FOR METRO POLICE OFFICERS IN PREVENTING CRIME	109
5.8 ADEQUATE RESOURCES AND SPECIALISED SERVICES IN THE METRO POLICE DEPARTMENTS THAT CAN ENABLE THEM TO COMBAT AND PREVENT CRIME IN SOUTH AFRICA	114
5.9 RECOMMENDATIONS BASED ON RESEARCH FINDINGS FOR THE BETTER CRIME PREVENTION THEORY AND POLICING MODEL	127
5.10 SUMMARY	128
CHAPTER 6: PRESENTATION OF QUANTITATIVE FINDINGS	130
6.1 INTRODUCTION	130
6.2 RELIABILITY OF THE INSTRUMENT	131
6.3 RESPONSE RATE	132
6.4 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON OBSTACLES	137
6.4.1 Descriptive statistics on barriers / obstacles	138
6.4.2 Descriptive statistics on solutions to obstacles	142
6.5 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON FUNCTIONS AND RESPONSIBILITIES OF METRO POLICE	148
6.5.1 Descriptive statistics on functions and responsibilities of metro police	148

6.6 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON CRIME PREVENTION TRAINING AND DURATION	156
6.6.1 Descriptive statistics on crime prevention duration	156
6.6.2 Descriptive statistics on crime prevention training	162
6.6.3 Descriptive statistics on resources.....	169
6.6.4 Descriptive statistics on specialised services	171
6.7 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON ADDITIONAL POWERS AND FUNCTIONS FOR METRO POLICE OFFICERS	173
6.7.1 Descriptive statistics on additional powers	173
6.8 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON LEGISLATION AND EFFECTIVE CRIME COMBATING AND PREVENTION.....	177
6.8.1 Descriptive statistics on legislation	178
6.8.2 Descriptive statistics on crime combating and prevention	179
6.8.3 Descriptive statistics on partnership roles.....	189
6.8.4 Descriptive statistics on additional roles	190
6.9 ASSESSING VALIDITY USING EXPLORATORY FACTOR ANALYSIS	198
6.9.1 Factor analysis on barriers / obstacles	200
6.9.2 Factor analysis on solutions	200
6.9.3 Factor analysis on functions and responsibilities	201
6.9.4 Factor analysis on crime prevention duration	203
6.9.5 Factor analysis on crime prevention training	204
6.9.6 Factor analysis on additional powers.....	206
6.9.7 Factor analysis on partnership roles	207
6.9.8 Summary of the factor solution	208
6.10 USING INDEPENDENT T-TESTS AND ANOVA TO DETERMINE MEAN SCORES DIFFERENCE	209
6.10.1 Independent t-test for significant difference in mean scores based on gender	210
6.10.2 Independent t-test for significant difference in mean scores based on whether one worked for the municipal police before.....	216
6.10.3 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on municipality.....	221
6.10.4 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on highest educational qualification.....	230
6.10.5 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on number of years working in municipal police.	231

6.10.6 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on position / rank.	240
6.11 CORRELATION ANALYSIS	248
6.12 SUMMARY	251
CHAPTER 7: COMPARISON OF QUALITATIVE AND QUANTITATIVE RESEARCH FINDINGS	253
7.1 INTRODUCTION	253
7.2 OBSTACLES HAMPERING CRIME PREVENTION ROLE OF METRO POLICE SERVICES.....	253
7.3 LEGAL SHORTCOMINGS AND NEGATIVE IMPACT CAUSED BY THIS OBSTACLES ON METRO POLICE CRIME PREVENTION ROLE	254
7.4 DIFFERENT FUNCTIONS BEING PROVIDED BY METRO POLICE SERVICE IN CRIME PREVENTION.....	255
7.5 POWERS AND RESPONSIBILITIES REQUIRED BY METRO POLICE TO BE EFFECTIVE IN CRIME PREVENTION	256
7.6 DETERMINE THE LEVEL OF TRAINING WHICH IS APPROPRIATE FOR METRO POLICE	256
7.7 EVALUATION OF ADEQUATE RESOURCES AND SPECIALISED SERVICES IN THE MPD	257
7.8 RECOMMENDATIONS BASED ON THE FINDINGS FOR BETTER CRIME PREVENTION THEORIES AND MODERN POLICING MODELS .	259
7.9 SUMMARY	261
CHAPTER 8: RECOMMENDATIONS AND CONCLUSION	262
8.1 INTRODUCTION	262
8.2 RECOMMENDATIONS.....	262
8.2.1 Provision of optimal police resources	262
8.2.2 Defiance of political interference, influence, and intervention	263
8.2.3 Relieving legislative limitations on crime prevention position of metro police	263
8.2.4 Provision for crime prevention training.....	264
8.2.5 Orderly recruitment and promotional system	264
8.2.6 Avoiding police duplications on functions	265
8.2.7 Implementation of same shift systems in the SAPS and metro police	265
8.2.8 Cooperation persistence among metro police and SAPS	265
8.2.9 Connection on design of the cities	266
8.2.10 Curb corruption in the city policing system	266

8.2.11 Provision of social crime prevention in the early childhood line	266
8.2.12 Permit metro police to investigation of crime	267
8.2.13 Allow metro police to have police holding cells	267
8.2.14 Authorise metro police to preserve crime evidence in a court of law	267
8.2.15 Empower metro police to present crime prevention training	268
8.2.16 Establishment of legal division within metro police directorate	268
8.2.17 Revising of Criminal Procedure Act No. 51 of 1977	268
8.2.18 Authorise metro police to combat, reduce and prevent crime	269
8.2.19 Work beyond municipal boundaries and jurisdictions	269
8.2.20 Chief of police reporting to newly appointed National Municipal Police Chief	269
8.2.21 Improve metro police organisational structure and setup	270
8.2.22 Protection of metro police information and data	270
8.2.23 Protecting municipal assets, properties and infrastructure	270
8.2.24 Permit metro police to deal with land invasion and crowd control role	270
8.2.25 Permit metro police to deal with illegal mining	271
8.2.26 Have extra power to prevent and combat crime	271
8.2.27 Supply of crime prevention equipment and crime detection aids ..	271
8.2.28 Provision of crime prevention units and services	272
8.2.29 General recommendations	272
8.3 APPLICABLE CITIZEN INVOLVEMENT POLICING MODEL.....	273
8.4 ADDITIONAL RESEARCH CONDUCTED.....	284
8.5 SUMMARY	284
REFERENCES.....	286
ANNEXURE A: UNISA ETHICAL CLEARANCE	300
ANNEXURE B1: GATEKEEPERS PERMISSION (TMPD)	302
ANNEXURE B2: GATEKEEPERS PERMISSION (EMPD)	304
ANNEXURE B3: GATEKEEPERS PERMISSION (JMPD).....	305
ANNEXURE C: CONSENT FORM.....	306
ANNEXURE D: PERMISSION FROM JMPD	308
ANNEXURE E: LANGUAGE EDITING CERTIFICATE	309
ANNEXURE F: INTERVIEWS SCHEDULE	310
ANNEXURE G: PERMISSION LETTER	312

ANNEXURE H: SURVEY QUESTIONNAIRE	317
ANNEXURE I: TURNITIN REPORT	343

LIST OF TABLES

Table 1.1: Example of serious and violent crime statistics	7
Table 6.1: Reliability analysis using Cronbach alpha	131
Table 6.2: Response rate of the sample	132
Table 6.3: Demographic profile of the respondents	134
Table 6.4: Descriptive statistics on barriers / obstacles	139
Table 6.5: Negative impact of barriers / obstacles on police officer's execution of duties	141
Table 6.6: Descriptive statistics on solutions to obstacles	142
Table 6.7: Adequacy of solutions to address barriers/obstacles	146
Table 6.8: Non-adequacy of solutions to address barriers / obstacles	147
Table 6.9: Descriptive statistics on functions and responsibilities of metro police	149
Table 6.10: Roles/additional performed by SAPS	152
Table 6.11: Reasons for effectiveness of formal partnership	153
Table 6.12: Reasons for non-effectiveness of formal partnership	154
Table 6.13: Descriptive statistics on crime prevention duration	156
Table 6.14: Reasons for effectiveness and adequacy of metro police training	160
Table 6.15: Reasons for non-effectiveness and adequacy of metro police training	161
Table 6.16: Descriptive statistics on crime prevention training	162
Table 6.17: Reasons for training of metro police in acceptable standards	166

Table 6.18: Reasons for non-training of metro police in acceptable standards	167
Table 6.19: Acceptable level of training requirements for metro police officers	168
Table 6.20: Descriptive statistics on resources	169
Table 6.21: Descriptive statistics on specialised services	171
Table 6.22: Descriptive statistics on additional powers	174
Table 6.23: SAPS perceive / understanding of role of metro police	176
Table 6.24: Legal failures for the metro police officers	177
Table 6.25: Reasons for effectiveness in crime prevention.....	179
Table 6.26: Reasons for non-effectiveness in crime prevention	180
Table 6.27: Reasons for improvements of crime prevention role	182
Table 6.28: Reasons for metro police effectiveness in prevention of crime	183
Table 6.29: Reasons for metro police non-effectiveness in prevention of crime	184
Table 6.30: Reasons for working under same minister	185
Table 6.31: Reasons for not working under same minister	186
Table 6.32: Outline for formal partnerships in practice	187
Table 6.33: Reasons for community not understanding the roles/functions of metro police	188
Table 6.34: Descriptive statistics on partnership roles.....	189
Table 6.35: Community policing forum	191
Table 6.36: Community safety initiatives.....	192
Table 6.37: Security cluster forum.....	192
Table 6.38: Business against crime	193
Table 6.39: Security policing initiatives.....	195
Table 6.40: Private security industry	196
Table 6.41: Any other comments.....	197
Table 6.42: Rotated factor analysis for barriers / obstacles	200
Table 6.43: Rotated factor analysis for solutions.....	201
Table 6.44: Rotated factor analysis for functions and responsibilities	202
Table 6.45: Rotated factor analysis for crime prevention duration.....	203
Table 6.46: Rotated factor analysis for crime prevention training	205

Table 6.47: Rotated factor analysis for additional powers	206
Table 6.48: Rotated factor analysis for partnership roles	208
Table 6.49: Independent t-test for mean score difference by gender	211
Table 6.50: Independent t-test for mean score difference by whether one worked for the municipal police before.....	217
Table 6.51: One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on municipality	222
Table 6.52: Tukey HSD post-hoc analysis of barriers / obstacles by municipality	223
Table 6.53: Games Howell post-hoc tests for solutions by municipality.....	225
Table 6.54: Tukey HSD post-hoc test for roles by municipality.....	226
Table 6.55: Games Howell post-hoc test for specialised services by municipality	228
Table 6.56: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for partnership roles by municipality ..	229
Table 6.57: One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on highest educational qualification	231
Table 6.58: One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on number of years working in municipal police	232
Table 6.59: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for roles by number of years working in municipal police.....	233
Table 6.60: Games-Howell post-hoc tests for crime prevention duration by number of years working in municipal police	235
Table 6.61: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for crime prevention training by number of years working in municipal police	237
Table 6.62: Games-Howell post-hoc test for specialised services by number of years working in municipal police	239
Table 6.63: One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on position / rank	240
Table 6.64: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for barriers / obstacles by position	242
Table 6.65: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for roles by position	243
Table 6.66: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for crime prevention duration by position	244

Table 6.67: Games-Howell post-hoc tests for crime prevention training by position.....	246
Table 6.68: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for specialised services by position.....	247
Table 6.69: Correlation between variables	249

LIST OF FIGURES

Figure 5.1: Bar chart graph on gender categories of participants	74
Figure 5.2: Pie chart graph on age categories of participants	75
Figure 5.3: Bar chart graph on race categories of participants	77
Figure 5.4: Bar chart graph of highest educational qualifications	78
Figure 6.1: Confidence interval error bars for roles by gender	214
Figure 6.2: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by gender	215
Figure 6.3: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by whether one has worked for the municipality before	220
Figure 6.4: Confidence interval error bars for resources by whether one has worked for the municipality before	221
Figure 6.5: Confidence interval error bars for barriers / obstacles by municipality	224
Figure 6.6: Confidence interval error bars for solutions by municipality	225
Figure 6.7: Confidence interval error bars for roles by municipality	227
Figure 6.8: Confidence interval error bars for specialised services by municipality	228
Figure 6.9: Confidence interval error bars for partnership roles by municipality	230
Figure 6.10: Confidence interval error bars for roles by number of years working in municipal police	234
Figure 6.11: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention duration by number of years working in municipal police	236
Figure 6.12: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by number of years working in municipal police	238

Figure 6.13: Confidence interval error bars for specialised services by number of years working in municipal police	239
Figure 6.14: Confidence interval error bars for barriers / obstacles by position	242
Figure 6.15: Confidence interval error bars for roles by position	244
Figure 6.16: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention duration by position.....	245
Figure 6.17: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by position.....	246
Figure 6.18: Confidence interval error bars for specialised services by position	248
Figure 8.1: Applicable Citizen Involvement Policing Model	274

CHAPTER 1: GENERAL ORIENTATION OF THE STUDY

1.1 INTRODUCTION

The Constitution of the Republic of South Africa, 1996, stipulates that “every citizen has the right to free movement and to feel safe at all time”. South African Police Service (SAPS) is entrusted with the responsibility of keeping peace, harmony and safety to all citizens of the country (Kole, 2015:1). Rauch, Shaw and Louw (2001:19) state that Metro Police Service (MPS) in South Africa is established as a new policing system to assist the SAPS in reducing crime. Rauch et al. (2001) further mention that there are serious challenges about the duties to be performed by the MPS in providing peace, safety and security within local inhabitant’s areas. Furthermore, the Constitution, stipulates that the safety and security of the country’s people lies with SAPS, South African Defence Force (SANDF) and Intelligence Service. Madihlaba (2018) highlights that there is silent motions and views regarding the job that is supposed to be executed by metro police in crime prevention.

Madihlaba (2018) maintains that metro police are not falling in the category of security services in terms of the Constitution. Municipal police are interdependent from SAPS with regards to their roles, responsibilities, tasks and control (Mokoena, 2007). There are misleading and silent conceptions and perceptions relation to the role that ought to be played by municipal police in maintaining, preserving and protecting law in the country. Sections 64 E of the SAPS (No. 68 of 1995), clearly describes the responsibility of the MPS as:

- Traffic policing, subject to any legislation relating to road traffic management.
- The policing of municipal by-laws and other municipal ordinances.
- Crime control and combating.

The role played by the SAPS is to maintain public order, safety, reduce, detect and investigate criminal activities in terms of the Constitution. It is imperative that lawlessness that occurs in major cities of our country need to be addressed constructively so that they involve various stakeholders, such as community, ordinary citizens, private security companies, State Security Agency (SSA) and

metro police (Morabito & Greenberg, 2005:3). These stakeholders should act in an organised and specialised manner in which it is intended to ensure criminal activities at major cities are dealt with.

In 1998, the Parliament of the Republic of South Africa passed the SAPS Amendment Act No. 83 of 1998 in October during the strategic session to partially strengthen law enforcement structures to deal with crime-combating capacity. This legislation made provision for establishment of the municipal police services also known as MPS by municipality operating within specific jurisdiction.

SAPS functions in dealing with ever-increasing serious and violent crime proved insufficient (Kole, 2015:2). This remains one of the critical reasons that led to the promulgation of the SAPS Amendment Act, Act No. 83 of 1998, which provides for the municipal police to perform police duties independently from SAPS. Rauch et al. (2001:19) assert that the intention of creating the MPS was to strengthen, compliment and support the SAPS in the reduction and control of criminal elements within the community. Rauch et al. (2001) further indicate that the launch of metro police in South Africa was seen as crime-fighting organ that will strengthen the SAPS in combating crime.

However, because MPS do not have powers to investigate criminal offences, it has restrictions on crime prevention role and preservation of evidence in court criminal element is still dominating within the community. These roles solely rest with SAPS as stipulated in the Constitution. Against this background, Tshwane launched metro police on 4 April 2002, with the aim of capacitating and complimenting national police in law and order maintenance, preservation of peace, stability, safety and security (Madihlaba, 2018:1). Furthermore, Magome (2015:1) indicates that metro police operate under limited regulatory legislations when compared to the national police service (SAPS). This has negatively impacted on crime prevention function in terms of maintenance of law and order in South Africa (Newham, 2006:1).

Madihlaba (2018:1) supports the view of Magome (2015:1) and Newham (2006:1) by outlining that SAPS Amendment Act empowers and authorises municipal executive management without relevant policing skills, security capacity, and knowledge of laws to manage MPS. Montesh (2011: 9) also concurs with Rauch et al. (2001:15) and Magome (2015:1) that despite the effort of introducing metro police in local government with the aim of strengthening and supporting SAPS in crime prevention and maintenance of law and order within the community, serious crimes still increasing in the communities. Kole (2015:2) states that in 2007, the then former Safety and Security Minister, Mr Nqakula, during the security seminar held in Johannesburg, outlined that the key responsibility of SAPS is to ensure that criminal element within the society is discouraged, eliminated and stopped.

An integration between the national police and several stakeholders which among others include corporate business, security providers, society and other law enforcement agencies could combat crime the country (Kole, 2015:2). Kole (2015), further indicates that citizens, police, business corporates and other law enforcement agencies are very instrumental in forming policing structures that will assist in dealing with criminal activities in South Africa.

In South Africa, the role of metro police in crime prevention especially in the three big cities is minimal in keeping confidence in people, investors and tourists (Mokoena, 2007:8). Incidents of theft, robbery, rape and murder happen within the metropolitan areas where municipal police are deployed. However, because they are not capacitated to address violent crime in terms of law, it is still a serious concern that needs executives from government and parliament to review the relevant laws (Madihlaba, 2018:146).

1.2 INTEGRATED DEVELOPMENT PLAN

Integrated Development Plan (IDP) was drafted to strengthen society's capacity by encouraging public involvement in society's development system programme and service delivery (Tshabalala & Lombard 2009:397). IDP is a strategic

government plan delegated to the local sphere of government structure especially MPD, to facilitate in crime prevention systems and programmes.

Tshabalala and Lombard (2009:298) mention that South African government formulated IDP as a service delivery systematic tool comprising five stages of the programme: Starting with an assessment of community needs, progress with regards to society's priorities establishment, explaining the community vision, aligned project activities to meet the needs and integrating these projects activities with identified priority programmes, to finally adopting the IDP.

Tshabalala and Lombard (2009) further assert that IDP is a coordinated service delivery model created to assist municipal structures in delivering quality services to the people in the local municipality. The IDP system is intended to structurally strive and pursue acceptable mitigating solutions within which resources are allocated to the local authority to accelerate quick response in terms of delivering services to the people.

IDP also indicates the number of critical functions that need to be delivered by the local municipal council such as ensuring that the community dwells in a peaceful and free good state of mind at all times (Guiele, Liebenberg & Van Huyssteen, 2007:102). According to Kole (2015:92), municipalities have a critical role in combating and preventing crime by cleaning abandoned, deserted and unoccupied houses, fixing streets lights, cutting vegetation, and forming legal policing structures by involving relevant stakeholders. Kole (2015) maintains that in terms of the Municipal System Act (MSA), 2000 (Act 32 of 2000), all municipal authorities need to speed up the processes that seek to advance the interests of community. This crime prevention instruction to the local police authority is partially indicated in terms of the SAPS Amendment Act No.83 of 1998.

1.3 WHITE PAPER ON SAFETY AND SECURITY OF 1998

In South African the security cluster formulated the White Paper on Safety and Security of 1998 with intention to address crime and violence activities that are occurring in the communities. This document invites different government departments, sectors, citizens, and businesses to cooperate to become part of crime prevention drivers. The White Paper has a variety of objectives and goals to achieve by underlying key sectors. This policy document acknowledges and strives to maintain law and order by introducing other safety and security models or approaches such as reduction of criminal activity through social and environmental landscaping. Moreover, these policy mechanisms also emphasise the implementation of SAPS strategies and standards that are aimed at promoting and preserving safety and security through crime prevention and visible policing as stipulated in the White Paper.

The local municipal authority is obliged to promulgate and enforce the crime prevention systems and policies that will create a free and peaceful society in terms of the White Paper and NCPS. According to Palmiotto (2011:85), the SAPS adopted community involvement mechanism as a community policing tool to help police deal. Mokoena (2007:8) points out that in the local municipal district, MPS was staged to fulfilling the intentions of the White Paper on Safety and Security by providing situation within the community environment that is safe, secure and have harmonious peace of mind.

The White Paper noted a role to be played by municipalities in crime prevention; meaningful progress has been done, with numerous crime prevention programmes being identified and structured. Local council authority through its interdepartmental forces is allowed in terms of White Paper to control and manage criminal elements by requesting other stakeholders' forums and meetings to share crime information and plan regarding criminal activities in the area.

Wolvaard (2007:3) argues that in terms of White Paper, SAPS has a responsibility to ensure that people are protected against any form of criminal activities and harm. This assertion is supported by Gastrow (2001:4), by accentuating that in terms of White Paper in Safety and Security of 1998 the SAPS is directly focusing on maintaining law and order. Baker (2008:68), on the other hand, adds that the Constitution places permanent duty to the SAPS to provide safety and security to all citizens. This point adds to the perceptions that is existing within the society that this document strengthens the role of the SAPS on how to deal with crime in general.

1.4 PROBLEM STATEMENT

According to official SAPS statistics for the period 2018/2019, serious and violent activities have increased drastically in terms of crime level in South Africa. This is a clear picture that there is a need for partnership among all crime-related busters and society in general. These crime statistics are collected as a guideline and official records to an extend into which criminal actions are perpetuated by criminals (Siegel, 2018:32). Burger (2007:111) argues that in order for police to be really efficient and effective in managing criminal elements government must pass laws, rules and create Oversight Portfolio Committee (OPC) on policing that will respond on how to deal with ever-demanding crime needs posed by criminal syndicates. Now that most what Burger (2007) suggests has been happening for a long time these days, we still have increasing crime levels. Therefore, it may be prudent now to take stock on the effectiveness of these avenues so that MPS Figure out what exactly is not working well.

Pheiffer (2013:156) mentions that most organised community structures and forums that deal with safety and security are collapsing because of the constant fear of community members. Pheiffer (2013) further indicates that failure by leading authorities such as OPC, SAPS and MPS to reduce violent criminal elements will bring a life threatening and insecure environment to the concerned society.

Government institutions were encouraged to promulgate and deal with criminal activities within the existing communities in terms of the SAPS Act, IDP, White Paper and NCPS. Palmiotto (2011:85) indicates that the SAPS adopted society's involvement and other policing models as directed by the South Africa Police Act in dealing with ever increasing crime statistics but still not yielding desired results. This denotes that the SAPS cannot successfully manage crime problem alone without other crime management and prevention stakeholders. For this study, examples of identified violent and serious criminal activities (from the official SAPS crime statistics for the period 2017 - 2018 & 2018-2019) will be assessed in Table 1.1.

Table 1.1: Examples of serious and violent crimes that have increased during the period of 2017/2018 & 2018/2019:

TYPE OF CRIME	2017/2018	2018/2019	INCREASE
Common Assault	156,243	162,012	5.769
Assault with Grievously Bodily Harm (GBH)	167,352	170,979	3.627
Common robbery	138,364	140,032	1.668
House burglary	220,026	220,865	0.839
Rape	40,035	41,583	1.548

(SAPS Crime statistics for the period 2017/2018 & 2018/2019)

The SAPS crime statistics from the abovementioned figures outline that violent and serious crime had increased significantly since 2017/2018 and 2018/2019, which is a worrying factor for the community. Rosenfeld and Messner (2013:114) highlight that this crime analysis is used to determine the common causes of criminality and determine appropriate model to deal with criminal behaviour. These crime statistics reinforce the notion and perception that SAPS is finding it very difficult to deal with ever-increasing criminal activities. In the same vein, Rauch et al. (2001:18) concur with the presented statistics that ordinary citizens are not safe where they reside and working.

Partnership policing with other role players in addressing criminal elements that occurs in the streets where they reside is therefore is one of the ways to consider in helping the national police to reduce and manage crime (Kole, 2015). Community involvement in crime reduction is a process that provides police with policing plans, which strengthen the police models that will be used with other stakeholders, rational ideas and to ideally resolve the existing imminent crime burden (Archbold, 2013:51). Archbold (2013) further mentions that it is still early to concede and surrender at this time because much can still be done to manage crime levels in South Africa.

Only high profile and serious criminal conducts which affect people have been selected for this study. This escalating crime had emotionally, morally, physically and financially caused unnecessary panic, pressure and fear to the Gauteng communities. Generally, MPS are only utilised by municipalities to implement specific by-laws ordinances and manage road traffic policing functions, respectively. The White Paper on Safety and Security of 1998 provides for local government to be involved in architecting and implementing crime combating mechanism in an effort to reduce crime.

In 1996 the South African government promulgated NCPS to address matters of violent behaviour and criminal activity. The NCPS highlights staggering number of government institutions and entities that shall play part in reducing, combating and preventing criminal elements within the country (NCPS, 1996:43). Mkhabela (2007:8) asserts that all stakeholders in crime reduction must formulate a strategic objective with mission and vision stipulating how crime will be controlled in the society. While Mokoena (2007:8) also states that local government specifically MPD should in terms of policing and security functions protect the municipal buildings, assets, infrastructures and properties to advance service delivery. This can be done only after security survey, audits, profiles, awareness, workshops and security risk assessments are conducted by metro police officers, security practitioners, state security agency and SAPS to determine the required uniformed best practice to be employed. There are concerning crime prevention

challenges and constraints that hamper metro police officers to effectively and efficiently execute their crime prevention duties in Gauteng metropolitan cities (Johannesburg, Ekurhuleni & Tshwane) of South Africa.

Lack of laws that allow metro police to execute crime prevention functions and responsibilities starting from the time of effecting arrest, investigation of crime and preservation of evidence in court until the sentencing of the accused is still a problem in South Africa (Montesh, 2011:9). There is clear part highlighting lack of accountability on failure to develop crime management and control systems, standards, procedures and plans within the municipal district offices. This leads to lack of taking responsibility on service delivery activities owing to failure of executive management on strategic plan with regard to crime prevention programmes and action plan as monitoring tool of implementation mechanism of the plan.

Mokoena (2007:142) asserts that there is also lack of police resources, skills, training and career police individuals within senior and top management of SAPS. It is in this light that there are law restrictions on how MPS should exercise their policing/security functions. Apart from unemployment, unemployment and hunger as societal problems, criminal activities within which society is living also play a role very worrying, stressing and intimidating challenges to all the people in South Africa (Kole, 2015:106). According to the 2018-2019 crime statistics released by SAPS and Statistics South Africa published in 2020, Gauteng Province experiences a huge increase in serious crimes committed every day and night in the communities. This may be attributed to the fact that Gauteng Province is where many South Africans from other provinces go for employment opportunities (Magome, 2015:1). Again, people from different parts of the world, especially from other African countries, come for similar objectives.

It will be of assistance for this study to contribute in coming up with suggested ideal structures that will assist in combating, preventing and managing criminal activities in Gauteng Province and to design a model to look into this critical crime

prevention theories which is sector concentrated policing, SCPT and crime prevention through environmental design. In addition to the crime prevention theories, the study will also be guided by citizen's partnership policing system (Kole, 2015:105). These crime prevention and reduction models are interrelated in reducing and preventing criminal activities.

Kole (2015) maintains that if police deployed correctly especially at local level of government it will assist because it is where human, economic and basic services are needed and provided the most. According to Kole (2015:87), strategic deployment and installation of intruder alarms, beams, cameras, proper perimeter fencing, lighting and visible policing as part of SCPT can be implemented in Gauteng metropolitan cities to curb crime.

In addition, Schneider (2015:49) suggests that the provision of houses, sports facilities, running water, eradication of unemployment through building of factories and industries where majority of marginalised South Africans are dwelling will impact positively as part of crime prevention through environmental design. Formally combined community policing structures, groups and clusters which consist of business cooperate, hawkers, citizens and law enforcement agencies play very important role in preventing criminal elements through partnership policing model (Felson & Boba, 2010:200). These mentioned crime prevention theories and models will be very instrumental and important for this study.

1.5 AIM AND PURPOSE OF THE STUDY

According to Denscombe (2002:25), there must be an intentional reason for doing research to indicate the focus and provide criteria for the analysis of the result of study. The purpose of study aim sought to explore, define, explain and outline the importance of the study (Welman & Kruger 2011:18). The aim of this study was to explore the role of MPS in Gauteng Province pertaining to crime prevention in South African cities and to come up with the recommendations that would help to improve the service of MPS in crime prevention.

The purpose of this study is to examine the crime prevention role play by metropolitan police services in Gauteng Province; to analyse factors that hinder and impact the effectiveness of MPS in Gauteng Province in dealing with crime prevention; and recommendations that are intended to improve and introduce new crime prevention perception and model in the MPS, specifically in Gauteng Province.

1.6 OBJECTIVES OF THE STUDY

Welman and Kruger (2011:18) mention that the objective of research is to describe, discuss and denote the intended purpose of the research study.

The following are the objectives of the study:

- to outline the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng Province;
- to determine legal shortcomings for the metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in Gauteng Province;
- to investigate different functions being provided by MPS that could be effective in preventing crime in Gauteng Province;
- to investigate powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in combating crime;
- to identify required resources and training that could effectively assist metro police officers in performing crime prevention role in Gauteng Province; and
- to provide recommendations based on research findings for the better crime prevention and policing theory/model to deal with crime holistically between metro police divisions and SAPS.

1.7 THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK

The following are critical theories and models that will be used in this study:

- Community policing involvement theory

The 1998 White Paper on Safety and Security describes community involvement policing as a means of giving security type of responsibilities to the community structures, which will respond and managed by a specific police station and official as their principle of reference on all criminal activities. The SAPS Act, No. 68 of 1995 outlines that police and community involvement in controlling and minimising criminal elements is very key to success. It also advocates the establishment of society's policing structures, forums and systems which intended to tackle and identify crime spots within the living places.

- **SITUATIONAL CRIME PREVENTION THEORY (SCPT)**

The Situational Crime Prevention Theory (SCPT) posits that criminal elements can be managed by deploying necessary control measures in place (Fenelly, 2012:145). Syndicates cannot take over the country while police, business and community can do much in putting security measures into perspective.

- **CRIME PREVENTION THROUGH ENVIRONMENTAL DESIGN (CPTED)**

Crime Prevention Through Environmental Design (CPTED) is a crime reduction plan that relies on specific developed on a dwelling place and environment, also looking into addressing difficult community physical environment (Atlas, 2013:60). For example, crime prevention through environment plan is a vehicle driven by government to reduce the likelihood of crime and close vacant space through developments such as establishing factories, manufacturing firms and malls next to the society dwelling places.

1.8 RESEARCH QUESTIONS

The following are the research questions that the study seeks to achieve:

- What are the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng Province?
- What are the legal shortcomings for the metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in Gauteng Province?

- What are the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police officers in crime prevention?
- Do metro police officers in Gauteng Province require special legal powers to act in combating crime?
- What level of training is appropriate for the metro police officers to be effective in crime prevention and is the current level of training adequate in equipping the metro police officers with the required knowledge for doing their job successfully?
- Are there adequate resources and specialised services in the MPDs that can enable them to combat and prevent crime in Gauteng Province?
- What would you recommend being effective methods for metro police officers in helping the police in combating crime?

1.9 VALUE OF THE STUDY

This study intended to analyse the role of MPS in crime prevention in Gauteng metropolitan municipalities. The obtained information in this study could guide the authorities such as the national government sphere, provincial government sphere, the local government sphere, society (e.g. community members or non-profit organisations) and business cooperates on how to support police in terms of crime prevention by using metro police officers within the metropolitan cities. The information gathered from this research could also assist metro police officers in terms of how to apply crime prevention theories as they are new security services in South Africa.

It will also, contribute towards the reinforcement of novel policing perceptions, initiatives and ideas in preventing crime by using metro police officers within the metropolitan cities. The findings of this research study will sensitise MPS members, society and other law enforcement agencies to be aware of the factors hampering effective crime prevention plan and the recommendations outlining how these factors could be resolved. In addition, the study will also equip other researchers with the necessary knowledge to help in understanding of the role of MPS. The findings may also be incorporated in the study guides of

Security Management to help them understand better the role of metro police officers in combating crime.

1.10 SUMMARY

The Constitution has placed the protection and safeguarding duty of the republic's inhabitants and its belongings to the police and other law enforcement agencies. Every citizen depends heavily on the police to ensure that they are safe, secured and protected against any harm, prejudice and cause of distress. It is concerning and regretful to realise that metropolitan police department which is perceived as well-established policing structure within local level of government is not empowered in terms of legislative mandate to deal with criminal element.

MPS in the country has been reckoned to be helping the national police division in controlling and managing criminal element, but there are obstacles hampering their city police officials to conduct crime prevention operations. The creation of council police directorate was envisioned as a progressive policing unit within the local level of state that will be integrated into the broader police force to attend issues involving security and safety of the societies. The benefiting results that the people are getting nowadays in terms of crime has negative impact in relations to safety service delivery mission.

It is critical for government to make sure that the roles, powers, mandates and functions of the MPS are clearly defined and outlined to serve the intended security purpose without legal doubts. In terms of the SAPS, metro police officials are partially tasked in ensuring that there is peace and harmony.

CHAPTER 2: RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

2.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter will describe the research methodology and research approach used by the researcher. Population and sampling selected for the research will also be explained. The sampling will be followed by a clear presentation of findings of data collected in the field of the study. The literature reviews through written documents, records, accounts, books, publications and other source of literature will be explained. Survey questionnaire and one-on-one interviews utilised in the research will also be discussed in detail. Data analysis will also be clarified in this section of the chapter fully. Additionally, the validity and reliability of the research study will be described in detail. The chapter will conclude with a brief explanation on the correctness and accurateness of the study in this research, as well as a quick impression of the ethical foundation and ideologies within which the research will be directed.

2.2 RESEARCH APPROACH

The methodological approach used in this research was mixed methods consisting of both qualitative and quantitative. These methods enabled researcher to obtain more in-depth information as possible. Berg (2004:5) defines triangulation as an important tool to be used to obtain large number of raw data together. In qualitative method, the researcher conducted one-on-one interviews with the participants at managerial level and in quantitative system survey questionnaire used.

2.3 THE RESEARCH DESIGN

The research design utilised by the researcher were as follows:

2.3.1 Qualitative research

One-on-one interviews: According to Maxfield and Babbie (2012:175), one-on-one interviews are another important source of information gathering because they limit the respondents' space of unanswered questions. The researcher also used case studies to uncover the role of three Gauteng Province metro police divisions in combating and preventing crime. The total of (45) metropolitan police officers on the senior management level of TMPD, EMPD and JMPD were interviewed. Interview schedule was used for this purpose (Annexure F: Interview Schedule).

The researcher had chosen these metropolitan municipalities because they are located in the Gauteng Province which is the focused site selected for the study. The other reason was that these municipalities receive a large, combined billions of rand (estimated R153.1 billion) in terms of allocated budget from the national and provincial government to deliver on critical services to millions of people.

There were 45 participants that contributed to this study and they were all members from top management of the MPDs from three chosen cities. Fifteen (15) top management members from the rank of senior superintendent/chief superintendents, commanders/deputy directors and directors from each of the three MPS in Gauteng Province were interviewed.

The purpose of interviewing top management was because they are involved in the strategic planning and decision-making position in their metro policing operational administration. Davies, Francis and Jupp (2011:65) mention that the researcher should make a very decisive conclusion with regards to the location of interviews. The researcher in this study conducted interviews using telephonic interviews respectfully on all selected respondents owing to the challenge caused by coronavirus disease (COVID-19) pandemic since 26 March 2020.

The aim of conducting interviews using telephonic method of communication was to avoid direct personal conduct and ensure that participants are free to participate in the study which were composed of closed and open-ended questions (Maxfield & Babbie, 2012:163). The researcher also used case studies to uncover the role of three Gauteng metro police divisions in crime, reduction, combating and prevention. The researcher recorded interviews using tape recorder to familiarise himself with the data at his time.

Literature review: According to Hennig (2004:27), the authors use literature review to check similarities and dissimilarities with regard to a specific contents, concepts, subjects and notions of the study in the form of journals, books, thesis, newspapers, articles and other written notes on the crime prevention role of the metropolitan police division. There was empirical data from different sources which focused on achieving this research study goals as underlined by asked research study questions (Nardi, 2014:33).

2.3.2 Quantitative method

Survey Questionnaires: Survey questionnaires (Annexure H: Survey Questionnaire) were used by the researcher in this study. Maxfield and Babbie (2012:167) assert that the questionnaires can be utilised for mixed-method approach it can only all varies on the manner in which questions were structured. In this research study questionnaires were clear, fair and understood by the respondents as explained before handing them to the respondents.

A total of 210 questionnaires were received from respondents and when the missing value analysis was carried out only 160 had missing information below 10%. According to Hair, Black, Babin and Anderson (2019:62), missing data under 10% for an individual case or observation can generally be ignored, except in the case where the missing data occurred in a specific non-random pattern. A total of 50 cases had missing data of over 10% and were dropped from the analysis leaving 160 questionnaires being valid for further analysis. There were 160 metropolitan police officers from TMPD, EMPD and JMPD that completed

and returned survey questionnaires in this study. However, participation was voluntary and, in some instance, some respondents chose not to answer certain questions. These participants were selected because they were part of the current workforce in the Gauteng metro policing system.

The participants were randomly selected to participate in completing the questionnaire. For the distribution of questionnaires, the researcher utilised snowball sampling. Those who were willing to participate were also asked to give to the interested members of metro police whom they know to complete the questionnaires. Interviews and survey questionnaire for this study began from 2 March 2020 and completed at the 19 December 2020.

2.4 POPULATION AND SAMPLING

2.4.1 Population

According to Welman, Kruger and Mitchell (2011:52), a population is the study objects made up of a several people, groups, human products and events, or the conditions in which they live. This research study focused on TMPD, EMPD and JMPD in Gauteng Province. This study was limited to hundred and sixty (160) selected metro police members at lower/junior operational level (who completed and returned survey questionnaires correctly) and forty-five (45) top management (interviewed) from the three metropolitan cities in Gauteng province of South Africa.

2.4.2 Sampling

The researcher used a random sampling method. A list of the population sampling from MPS of the three Gauteng metropolitan cities participated in the study as follows: 44.4% (n=71) were from Tshwane, 28.7% (n=46) were from Ekurhuleni and 26.9% (n=43) were from Johannesburg. About 160 total number of survey questionnaires were completed and returned by respondents from the rank of constables /sergeants, inspectors and superintendents. The reasons for

choosing the mentioned ranks were because they are on a daily basis working on 12 hours shifts and relevant on clarifying metro police duties, challenges, obstacles and solutions. On the other hand, 45 metropolitan police officers from the senior management level in the TMPD, EMPD and JMPD were interviewed from the rank of senior superintendent/chief superintendent, commanders/deputy directors and directors.

2.5 DATA COLLECTION METHODS

Leedy and Ormrod (2005:26) describe data collection as a procedure used to accumulate information on a specific field of study with regards to a particular trials or events to try and resolve identified challenge. Gathered data from relevant individuals selected from Gauteng MPS were collected using different information gathering approaches (Pheiffer, 2013:21). During data gathering process, the researcher ensured that the respondents were free from any form of harm, prejudice, no injury and inducement because this study presented no physical harm or fear to the participants. There were various methods of data gathering used by researcher to acquire appropriate data for this study which was literature review, survey questionnaire and one-on-one interviews.

Literature review: The researcher made several explorational search for literature which were related to or similar to the title of this study. Full literature review was undertaken by the researcher to obtain connected or related data on the topic both nationally and globally on available journal articles, recorded newspapers, written reports, books, internet, dissertations, thesis and any other recorded information.

Survey questionnaires: Number of questionnaires were administered in the form of rating scales or a list of various answers to select from closed and open-ended questions, respondents were also given an opportunity to comment on their own experiential knowledge about the response (Kuada, 2012:107). The researcher clarified the questionnaires to the respondents before administering

them and the respondents completed them using their own opinion and expertise on their own time.

One-on-one interviews: One-on-one interviews using telephonic method of communication were conducted by the researcher with a chosen senior management of MPS in Gauteng Province. The importance of interviewing this top management was to understand the key strategic decision-making drive on operations.

2.6 DATA ANALYSIS

Data were coded and clustered into categories in which the researcher was able to make sense of them to be in line with the themes of the study. Completed survey questionnaires were coded and put into Excel spread sheets using computer tool to capture it, was used by the researcher. An experienced statistician was used for the statistical analysis of coded information. The data collected through coding of the information received from interviews was also entered into Excel spread sheets.

The researcher explored every detailed given ideology to produce a clear description of data collected. The data were compiled from transcriptions in the form of verbatim words or phrases describing the actions that the interviewees were undertaken to explore the role of Gauteng's MPDs in crime prevention. A qualified transcriber was assigned and entrusted to transcribe the audio recordings. According to De Vos, Strydom, Fouche and Delport (2011:412), there are different types of coding procedures such as open coding, axial coding and selective coding followed by the researcher in this study to bring desired data results through mixed methods approach.

2.7 VALIDITY, RELIABILITY AND ACCURACY OF COLLECTED INFORMATION

Ensuring validity: Validity refers to whether measurement was done to represent what they are intended to measure and was equally applied to ensure

reliability of the research findings (Lewis-Beck, Bryman & Liao, 2004:117). Validity is the extent to which the research findings accurately represented what happened in reality (Welman et al. 2011:211).

The information from the participants was cross checked to verify for validity. Anonymity and confidentiality of the participants were always upheld as it was a requirement in terms of ethical conduct. The researcher asked all the participants the same question so that consistency was maintained. The researcher used the same interview schedule for all respondents in the three Gauteng's metro police departments. Leading and biased questions were avoided by the researcher in the study.

Ensuring reliability: Data triangulation was used on the data obtained from the questionnaires and interviews. Data collected from different participants at different times were compared. The data collected throughout the study was accurate as it should be. The study should be such that even when the study was conducted by somebody else under the same conditions then the results should be the same.

2.8 ETHICAL CONSIDERATIONS

Leedy and Ormrod (2005:101) highlight that if people are involved in a study, the need arises to seek attention to ethical considerations and consequences of what you need to study, and ethical matters in the study clustered in protection from harm, informed consent, right to privacy, and honesty with professional colleagues.

Therefore, this research adhered to ethical code of University of South Africa (UNISA) Code of Ethics and Constitutional Rights of the Republic of South Africa. (Annexure A: Ethical Consideration Certificate).

In following ethical considerations, the following were considered:

2.8.1 Protection from harm: Creswell (2009:64) argues that every study has ethical consideration that the researcher is confronted to comply with in order to protect any form of physical and psychological harm for respondents. Babbie (2007:27) contends that the ethical principle of any social research is that respondents must not experience any kind of harm. The researcher must at all times ensure that the well-being of respondents is not compromised (Huysamen, 2001:183). Participants in this study were informed of findings of this study and that their part taking is voluntary.

2.8.2 Informed consent: The researcher ensured that the confidentiality of the participants in this study were adhered to and informed consent (Annexure E: Informed consent) to participate in the research were completed by respondents (Leedy & Ormrod, 2005:101). The participants were informed that they could at any given time stop their participation when they felt uncomfortable to participate. More importantly, the participants were not forced to continue to participate in this study.

The participants in this study were requested to sign consent form that explains the contents of the study. Permission letters were sent to the participants before the study could start. Gatekeeper's permission was also be requested and approved before the study could start. Permission was sought by the researcher to conduct the study from the selected Municipal Police Divisions (Annexure A1 (Johannesburg) A2 (Tshwane) A3 (Ekurhuleni) Permission Letters).

2.8.3 Right to privacy: The researcher must at all times uphold the right to privacy in terms of participants (Leedy & Ormrod, 2005:102). "Privacy" means to keep something yourself as agreed with the person who told you or avoiding spreading a word to other people to critically evaluate it (De Vos et al., 2011:119). In this research, the common principles of privacy by participants were considered throughout the study.

2.8.4 Honesty and professionalism: The researcher took the issues of honesty through professional conduct and behaviour into consideration in this study. The researchers who ignore the ethical issues are deliberately and intentionally hurting the society (De Vos et al., 2011:127). The study was guided by the norms, values, morals, and dignity of the people participating in it. Section 14 of the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa, Act No. 108 of 1996, stipulates privacy as a fundamental right. All the research data were handled by the researcher in a confidential manner. The researcher ensured that all the data was locked in a lockable cabinet where only the researcher will have access. No children or animals were used in the study. The participants did not experience any harm by participating in the study.

2.9 LIMITATIONS OF THE STUDY

The study was only limited to Gauteng Province of South Africa. This research was confined to three big Gauteng Municipal Police Departments, namely, TMPD, EMPD and JMPD. All respondents were from Gauteng and were grouped according to their positions or ranks from junior officers to the top management.

The researcher had chosen these municipalities because they are located in the Gauteng Province which is the focused site selected for the study. These municipalities were selected by the author because they are known as South African economic hub, crime inflated areas, economic centre hub and hosting too many migrants in the South African municipal context. The other reason was that these municipalities receive a huge, combined billions of rand (estimated R153.1 billion) in terms of budget allocation from the national and provincial government to deliver satisfying basic constitutional services to the millions of people.

2.10 SUMMARY

The research approach used was mixed methods consisting of qualitative and quantitative approach, methods and designs. Data collection methods which consist of literature review, other sources of data such as newspaper articles, journal and written reports, survey questionnaires, one-on-one interviews were

outlined in detail. Population sampling and data analysis were discussed in detail. The validity, reliability and accuracy and ethical considerations on the study which outlined the protection from harm, informed consent, right to privacy, honesty and professionalism including the limitation of the study were discussed in detail.

CHAPTER 3: LITERATURE REVIEW

3.1 INTRODUCTION

Section 205 (1) of the Constitution stipulates that the police service can be arranged from all spheres of government to deal with criminal activity. Every citizen has a right to be protected and be able to conduct own matters without danger and fear. Among the required functions of law enforcement agencies especially the SAPS, must defend and protect every citizen's possessions, assets, infrastructures, and personnel belongings within the country.

Detailed security risk assessments may guide this protection, identified crime hotspots and collected crime risk data which are essential in providing indications of weakness, security flaws, vulnerabilities and strength and crime hotspot for law enforcement agencies. Schneider (2015:49) asserts that the drawing and planning of the community residence in the cities are anticipated to support safety and security. This story is also denoted in the NCPS (1996) that clear joint effort by stakeholders are important in reducing criminal activities in South Africa. The City of Johannesburg Drafted IDP (2018/19) reflects evidence which indicates that general and common crimes have declined at an average annual rate of 4.9% between the period 2005/06 to 2015/16.

This was perpetuated by the good relations between the community, businesspeople, and law enforcement agencies. MPS was formulated in terms of the SAPS Amendment Act to complement the SAPS to reduce and prevent criminal activities in the metropolitan cities. This requires city management and administration to draft and enforce a supporting crime prevention strategic plan detailing how they are going to deal with day-to-day criminal element within the cities.

3.2 THE BARRIERS/OBSTACLES TO EFFECTIVE CRIME PREVENTION

MPS was formulated in terms of the SAPS Amendment Act No. 83 of 1998 to complement the SAPS in their respective juristic area of crime reduction and combating. Many keen crime prevention barriers/obstacles hamper metro police officers from effectively and efficiently executing their crime prevention and reduction duties in Gauteng metropolitan cities (Johannesburg, Ekurhuleni and Tshwane) in South Africa (Montesh, 2011:19).

Among noted obstacles in Gauteng MPS are limited crime prevention powers and responsibilities vested to city council police members such as being unable to investigate, gather evidence, preserve, setup crime intelligence driven operations and provide crime statistics for proper planning.

It is worth mentioning that the shortage of resources such as policies, strategies, vehicles, bullet proof vests, firearms, ammunitions and general policing equipment form a very derailing barrier/obstacle to the crime stopping success of metro police sections within Gauteng municipalities. Beside good party statements they have drawn during the election campaigns into how town police should respond to criminal behaviour if they win election, but after they won it is impossible to achieve their law-breaking objectives owing to partisanship and lack of good crime prevention training and development for local police institutions (Magome, 2015:1).

The existing metro police teaching that is being offered in the council police schools are specifically for road traffic and by-law management which is provided by unqualified and inexperienced municipal traffic or security instructors (Mokoena, 2007:159). There is scarcity of knowledgeable police representatives within the municipal police structures who can educate city council police officers on tactical armed response, self-protective techniques, crime prevention models, handling of firearm training and other related crime reduction approaches (Mokoena, 2007:142).

The other barrier/obstacle that is hindering the city council police divisions in Gauteng Province on a scope of crime combating is political influence, interference and intervention which are endorsed by regulations (Reisig & Kane, 2014:14). Since the 2016 municipal elections in Gauteng, Tshwane, Ekurhuleni and Johannesburg municipalities are being governed by coalitions or agreement terms which is affecting the stability in municipal crime reduction intentions. Tshwane and Ekurhuleni municipal regions have changed their mayors, city managers and chiefs of police more than twice in three years (Beek, Gopfert & Steinberg, 2017:12).

This party-political change was not centred on performance-based strategy but only founded on political judgements, aspirations and manifestos, as such it affected the policing part of officers on the metropolitan jurisdiction (Zulu, 2017). Official SAPS records for the period of 2018/2019 on violent criminality have increased in terms of percentage in South Africa. This is a picture that there is a need for partnership among all crime-related busters and society in general. MPD operate under controlled and minimal authorised framework when compared to the national police force (Crime Statistics Gauteng, 2018/2019).

The setting up of metro police in South Africa was perceived as new policing division by the African National Congress (ANC) command team presented to support the SAPS in preventing, reducing and combating crime. However, the Constitution and SAPS Amendment Act limit powers and functions to be accomplished by metro police. They set aside policing powers on crime prevention tasks which contain crime stopping operations, crime intelligence operations, organised crime prevention operation and investigation of criminal offences.

These roles merely rest with SAPS as specified in the Constitution. In contrast to this background, the City of Tshwane, Johannesburg, Ekurhuleni, Nelson Mandela Bay and City of Cape Town are among the numerous cities in South Africa launched metro police in early 2000 and beyond, with the intention of

complimenting SAPS in crime combating, order maintenance, conservation of peace, stability, safety and security.

Montesh (2011:19) mentions that the creation of metro policing in the country during early 2000 was planned to support SAPS in terms of crime control, but owing to legislative boundaries, repetition of tasks, lack of resources, poor training, partisan and political influence on the part of metro police make it impossible to achieve that goal. Montesh (2011) maintains that metro police in the country cannot work autonomously in terms of police orders, protocols, and values dictated by national police records and booklets.

MPS in South Africa operate under limited lawful authority in terms of crime combating and reduction when compared to the SAPS. This has led to undesirable bearing in terms of providing and promoting free and harmless settings in South African Metropolitan cities (Newham, 2006:1). Section 205 (3) of the Constitution outlines the objectives of the SAPS as follows: “prevent, combat and investigate crime; to maintain public order; to protect and ensure that the all citizens of the Republic and their assets and are protected at all times”.

While Schneider (2015:290) is of the opinion that the municipal policing if given full powers can play integral part in crime prevention through which there are clear development of laws, regulations and policies, also provide required resources that will promote society’s oriented policing which will be able to deal with crime investigation and reduction action.

This barrier in terms of lack of full policing powers by the metro police officers, like the powers vested on the members of SAPS, in South Africa is also asserted by Super (2013:20). The latter argues that the challenging part of city council police in managing crime reduction operations and administration in a democratically elected government is that they account and succumb to the specific political bureaucracy which is centralised. Rowe (2020:17) further indicates that most elected leaders of political organisation appoint their preferred comrades irrespective of relevant work skills, knowledge and experience to lead

police departments within the government. This political interference, intervention, influence and pressure is backed and packaged in terms of section 206 of the Constitution.

The Constitution further dictates that the SAPS is the only organisation of government authorised to “investigate, collect, trace, sketch, prevent and preserve any alleged case” to the court of law for trial on any individual suspected to have committed crime as set by the regulation. Vadackumchery (1999:28) posits that most police leadership and operations management are influenced and directed by the leading political party. Walker and Archbold (2020:4) point out that the statutory limitation, political backlash, police accountability and poor police resource allocation and training are critical challenges in the USA, as noticed by President Barack Obama Task Force (BOTF). The task force suggested that crime combating operations, strategies and systems be unbiased, exposed and clear to meet required police standards.

Similarly, Rowe (2020:17) concurs with the opinion of Super (2013:20), by pointing out that it is true that political interference in the country started years ago where security forces were directly instructed to only patrol and arrest black political leaders of ANC comrades and other freedom fighters and activists.

Even after 24 years of democracy the ruling party in the South African political hierarchy is still using the police to spy and investigate the opposition’s party leaders and supporters for party politics. This political interferences and influence compromise police integral profession, also the manner in which police officers plan their policing operations within the South African policing sector in the national and local municipal level (Montesh, 2011:9). Political pressure to police management has created confusion and fear to the man in uniform especially on how to confront crime within a particular geographical area because politicians want to serve and satisfy their own interests.

Montesh (2011) further highlights that political instructions to the policing system is the fundamental cause of a very disturbing and confusing experiment with

regards to crime combating operations and enforcements within the local level of government. The political legitimacy in managing and influencing policing system on operations is promoted in terms of the Constitution, section 206 (1) and 207 (2). Reisig and Kane (2014:14) indicate that political power is still used as a vehicle to manage and control police regulations, policies and operations that are intending to deal with criminal behaviours. These politicians safeguard and protect their political party constituencies, status and interests by imposing on critical decisions in the policing operations, strategies, policies and standards (Chambliss & Hass, 2012:7).

Arain (2014:95) concurs with Montesh (2011:9) and Chambliss and Hass (2012:7) by stipulating that political interference and influence has interrupted the policing functions in Pakistan in a bad way, especially for women police officers. Politicians exerted extreme pressure to police stations and centres on day-to-day operations. Arain (2014) further mentions that Ministers and Members of Parliament are involved in recruiting, selecting, transferring and deploying of police officers where they prefer.

Rowe (2020:11) outlines that in Britain Operational Independence of British Police Department (OIBPD) body is a critical support system which takes policing decision especially those affecting their police operations and actions.

According to Walker and Archbold (2020:6), the USA is divided in terms of the model they use to run police departments in their federal states. This is influenced by the race, ethnicity, gender, political influence and other cultural diversity. Similarly, this political interference, poor police resource allocation, inadequate police training and management affect how metro police officers and women have to respond to ever increasing crime within big cities of South Africa (Montesh, 2011:9). On the other hand, Madihlaba (2018:141) mentions that most municipal facilities that provide important basic services to the community need to be protected at all times independently without interference and bullying by political administrators.

Police functions and responsibilities in South Africa are influenced and propelled by the governing party (Beek, Gopfert & Steinberg, 2017:12). The impact of all mentioned crime prevention barriers and obstacles in the metro police division has a demanding and negative impact on service delivery targets. Municipality as a state organ in local sphere of government provides key services to the people of South Africa which among others include basic services such as electricity, water, health, safety and security, transport, and shelter among others. These barriers are making life difficult for the municipal police members in achieving their perceived crime prevention and other policing functions.

It is of importance for justice system boards to look into how to unlock these impeding obstacles on city police for them to conclude independent investigation, defy political commands, provide better resources and well qualified police instructors to teach about criminality. This will help the town policing leg in developing good crime prevention plans and operations on service delivery demonstrations while national police on the other hand busy with criminal track and tracing.

3.3. LEGAL FAILURES FOR THE METRO POLICE OFFICERS IN CRIME PREVENTION, COMBATING AND REDUCTION IN SOUTH AFRICA

MPS was established in terms of SAPS Amendment Act to complement the SAPS in crime prevention, combating and control. Furthermore, MPS work under stringently limited legislative power instruction when equated to the SAPS. City police officials are not allowed in terms of the Constitution and SAPS Act to investigate, conduct crime intelligence operation, preserve and store evidence on any arrested perpetrator. Further than that town council police are restricted to have their own police standby jails, obtain crime data and out of border policing operations.

Urban police are situated in the local level of government. Its mandatory priority is to deliver the basic and life conserving services to members of the public at all time. Most of the times other municipal departments do not provide timely

adequate and effective basic essentials to the society which sometimes irritate the masses who end up staging service delivery demonstrations.

Other city client departments require assistance from the MPD to deal with protestors, picketers and marchers but little did they know that metropolitan police members have no powers to manage crowds unless they are assisting the SAPS Public Order Policing Service (POPS). The other legal impediments to the metro police members are the powers entrusted on the Municipal Manager to manage and administer the police service within the municipality while is not trained police officer.

The objective in the Constitution of ensuring that all people within the land are protected remain headache for SAPS (Mashego, 2020:13). The lack of powers for MPS to conduct crime prevention operations make it possible to city police to control crime. Failure to conclude crime prevention powers for municipal police is making their job difficult on the perceived crime stopping responsibilities that is expected from them when patrolling the streets of the big cities in South Africa.

MPS was established in terms of SAPS Amendment Act, to complement the SAPS in crime prevention, combating and control. In addition, MPS work under stringently limited legislative power instruction when equated to the SAPS.

The legislative catastrophe has been validated in Sections 64 E of the SAPS No. 68 of 1995 which describes the duty of the metro police officers as:

- “Street traffic policing, subject to any legislation relating to road traffic management.
- The execution of municipal by-laws and other municipal ordinances.
- Crime Prevention through Environmental Design (CPTED)”.

For the mere fact that crime prevention revealed at the end of this responsibilities in terms of the SAPS Act, it seats very well with the notion that it is not metro police’s mandatory function as alleged crime division.

This partial and restrictive crime prevention rules have led to poor service rendering by metro police officers in terms of protecting, investigating, reducing and promoting peace and harmony in the land of South African cities (Newham, 2006:1). In contrast, Rauch, Shaw and Louw (2001:19) point out that municipal police are not reliant on SAPS with regards to resource allocations, uniform, responsibilities, tasking, and control. Montesh (2011:9) concurs with the views of Newham (2006:1) and Rauch et al. (2001:19) that metropolitan police department is not empowered to have their municipal crime specialised police units using their own resources secretly and independently to deal with a specific criminal element within the big cities of South Africa.

It is academic that metro police pursue their operations without direct and indirect financial help or assistance from the SAPS. The independence of municipal police in terms of their accomplished local police authority structure and integrated decision-making system is not obliged to assist in directing their resources to cool the crime wave that is sweeping metropolitan cities owing to powerless metro police officials (Madihlaba, 2018:3).

The noted statutory let-downs by the democratic South African government were to indirectly establish metropolitan police department coping from federal and communist states not looking into stringed impossible and restrictions such as not be able to preserve cases, investigate crime, collect crime information and persistently duplicates functions (Montesh, 2011:9). Magome (2015:1) concurs with the views by Newham (2006:1) and Rauch, et al., (2001:19), by further asserting that instead SAPS Amendment Act exerted maximum authority, power and responsibility to Municipal Chief Executive Officer (MCEO), who lack policing training and knowledge to take charge of MPS. Therefore, the Act further allows police officers to take instruction from the politicians such as Mayors, Ministers and Member of Executive Council (MEC) and Member of Mayoral Committee (MMC) as supported in the Constitution of South Africa through political legitimacy. These silent legislative failures and omissions have led down and polarised metro police forces within the local spheres of government in the big cities of the country.

The only detailed and definitive legislation that provides clear mandate and authoritative powers to metro police officers is the National Road Traffic Act and sections of the Criminal Procedure Act. These Acts provide that metro police officers can stop, search, arrest and detain any motorist or a driver of a vehicle on a public road that can be found to be in contravention with the national road traffic and criminal procedure prescripts. Metropolitan police division in South Africa requires clear and straight forward regulation that talks about their power and authority in terms of executing crime prevention role specifically in the investigation of cases, information gathering and the preservation of evidence in a court of law (Rauch, et al.2001:19).

That metro police officers other than SAPS cannot investigate, preserve, present, and collect crime informative data to assist in the prosecution of the accused at the local level of government is a serious regulatory failure that hinders effective and efficient security services. There is clear record material from insights of municipal police that shows 89% of Tshwane municipal police participant's views from the crime prevention role played by them mentions that they are not allowed to acquire or inquire on criminal case circumstances, gathering of written exhibit, giving ideas in a court of law, setting up big police operations and responding on crime behavioural pattern (Madihlaba, 2018:92).

3.4 FUNCTIONS AND RESPONSIBILITIES VESTED IN METRO POLICE OFFICERS IN CRIME PREVENTION

Initially, in the early eighties the guts to establish municipal security forces within the municipal boundaries was through the Black Local Authorities Act No. 102 of 1982. This Act permitted and empowered the municipal safety forces to patrol the city streets, arrest individual without permits, and clean vendors working in the regulated zones of the big cities. After the 1994 era, there were more difficulties regarding crime prevention and combating responsibilities vow to be accomplished by the metropolitan police services in South Africa.

The municipal police officers while on duty they take control of road through visibility, attending to criminal incidents and also ensure that accidents and criminal activity scenes are protected from contamination. Among the responsibilities they perform is to secure municipal infrastructures, attend motor vehicle accidents and deal with informal traders selling on town streets as per the National Road Traffic Act No of 1996 and Municipal by-laws regulations. There is no sufficient approved crime linked and comprehensive orders to the municipal police in terms of SAPS Amendment Act and the Constitution of the country in which part to play in reducing crime and accomplishing crime proportion targets (Rauch, et al. 2001:18).

Disappointment by major law enforcement in South Africa is viewed as chief experts such as SAPS and municipal police in preventing serious criminal elements carry a life frightening and questioning security condition to the concerned community (Pheiffer, 2013:157). This crime combating expectation and instruction is detailed IDP, NCPS and the White Paper.

IDP and NCPS of 1996 partially empower the structured council police authority to framework and apply the crime prevention campaigns and policies that shall improve society's well-being, including their streets, area and residential places. While on the other hand Palmiotto (2011:85) reiterates that SAPS approved community involvement system and interdepartmental relation in dealing with every growing criminal element within the society.

The criminal reduction portion that is supposed to be played by metropolitan police department differs from the one performed by the SAPS in terms of legislative mandates, powers and responsibility. This appears to be a confusing argument involving the crime prevention support role that ought to be played by the metropolitan police department in the criminal justice structure (Van Biljon, 2014:15). While Madihlaba, (2018:83) supports the opinion of Rauch et al. (2001:18) and Van Biljon, (2014:15) by mentioning that the crime prevention powers and functions vested on metropolitan police service is misleading, confusing, undecided, misinterpreted and legally silent.

The real crime prevention legislative ability of the metropolitan police department is described clearly in Section 64 E of the SAPS Act (1995) as:

- “Road policing control and management, subject to any legislation relating to road traffic (NRTA);
- The enforcement of council by-laws and other municipal, statute, regulations; and
- The prevention of crime.”

According to Bushnell (2017:30), Metropolitan City of New York in the USA unlike in South Africa metropolitan police department to investigate crime, conduct intelligence driven operations, conduct crime prevention operations on stopping and searching any individuals roaming the streets suspected as criminals.

Similarly, in the Australian city of Melbourne in the town of Victoria, Bushnell (2017:29) indicates that lack of clear legislative direction and management to the metropolitan police hierarchy is causing the increase in high crime rate in thefts, robbery and assault increasing exponentially. Further than that In Mexico, Ochoa and Torres (2019:226) feel disappointed by the crime prevention role of the municipal police and their related national police forces in the Mexican city of Michoacán, as they dismally failed to deal with ever coming cases of drugs dealing against syndicates and hard-core crime lords who seem to be winning the crime battle against the police and security clusters.

Similarly, Petrow (1998:175) postulates that in the late 18th century, the Hobart municipal police were incapable to deal with ever-increasing illegal elements ever occurring in the city streets of Hobart owing to incapacity, poor police tools and training in terms of crime prevention role. Petrow (1998) points out that in the late 1890 there was a great significant improvement in Hobart municipal police whereby their effort to control and manage crime yielded good results.

The Hobart police are daily patrolling the streets, investigating crimes related to drugs and setting up intelligence-driven operations. The policing functions on crime prevention and combating in South Africa differ with other developed

countries around the world. This policing gap could be caused by the governance system which is more centralised in South Africa than the federal system used by the USA and United Kingdom (UK) countries. It is now time to advocate the amendment of the Constitution to disband the powers vested on politicians and allow crime prevention powers to the South African Municipal Police Departments (SAMPD).

Specific metro police function details of road traffic, by-laws and crime prevention enforcement as directed by SAPS Act will be outlined next.

3.4.1 Traffic Road policing management

Section 31 of the National Road Traffic Act, indicates that a traffic officer and metropolitan police officer under appointment have powers and duties to control, manage and control road policing operations (Van Biljon, 2014:25). Section 64A (2) of the SAPS Act stipulates that the formulation of metro police may not amend operational responsibility of road traffic policing and the enforcement of the traffic offences, observation and control within a specific local authority (Memeza & Rauch, 2000).

Furthermore, Mokoena (2007:71) asserts that road traffic control, street patrol, accident management and highway visibility are key functions of municipal police that are intended to create a safe and peaceful road safety location. Further Mokoena (2007), provides that the main duties to the municipal police to enforce and regulate traffic control, management and authority as prescribed in the law.

Rauch (2001:15) stipulates that the clear functions and responsibilities of metro police officers are writing and issuing traffic fines, attending motorists when involved in accidents, and managing the flow of traffic around the streets of the city. Terril (2015:323) concurs with Memeza and Rauch (2000) and Rauch (2001:15) that metro police can also protect the scene of road traffic and road procedures where a motorist has been killed owing to road accident event for SAPS to conduct and conclude the event circumstances.

In this way the metro police as traffic officer can only cordon off the crime scene and wait for the arrival of the police officer to take over. That is why any crime and/or accidents should be reported to the police station so that police officer should attend to the crime scene and this should happen in 24 hours that the accident happened. Of course, at the crime scene the traffic officer will play their role by recording the accident if it involves the motor vehicles accident or the police officers will write statements if it so happened that people died in the motor vehicles accident for further investigations. Gauteng Safety Strategy (2014:19) which is the province safety crime combating plan drafted to deal with crime elements and the road traffic management to create safety and security in Gauteng.

In 2006, the City of Tshwane Metropolitan Municipality (CTMM) adopted Safer City Policy, formed in mid-2000 as a traffic police strategic plan to assist them in managing road accidents, roadblocks, and patrolling the streets (Riekert & De Vries, 2015:101). TMPD in addition positioned the Tshwane Road Policing Strategy (2013:01) as a road traffic policing tactical design to build a safer city road, non-stop road guarding and regulating road at all times. This view is similarly implied in the White Paper and NCPS as a driving wheel on guidance to the local government departments especially the metro police division.

Metro police officers are conducting road and street safety management in the city council, intending to create a safer street and road environment day and night (Masuku & Maepa, 2004:9). Van Biljon (2014:16) concurs with Newham (2006:2) that the role of municipal police is a traffic road policing which comprises traffic regulations, driver behaviour, controlling and implementing drunken driving awareness, providing licensing provisions and suspensions managing accident deterrence patterns, supervising, teaching and penalising motorists that contravened traffic-related rules or regulations and by-law implementation. Van Biljon (2014) further indicates that traffic management include other related traffic planning, organising and development of road traffic system that are holistically used to reduce road fatalities.

3.4.2 By-laws execution

Section 156 (2), Schedule 4 Part B and Schedule 5 Part B of the Constitution stipulates that a municipal council may provide and implement city council's regulations that will govern, among others buildings, business structures, road closure regulations, noise pollution, home and child-care facilities, municipal health services, building plans, firefighting services, and trading regulations. The control and enforcement of the city's regulations, rules and legal frameworks is one of the critical responsibilities of metropolitan police department as outlined in terms of SAPS Act.

The enforcement of municipal regulations by metro police is being provided and determined in terms of the council resolutions, NCPS, and the White Paper. Equally, these national strategies seek rule of law progression among others and the effectiveness of the MPD and other law enforcement entities in the country to heighten crime reduction and control actions.

According to Craythorne (2006:326), the law enforcement officers are authorised to regulate, police and arrest illegal trading by unregistered hawkers within the central business district (CBD). The JMPD works in partnership with other entities such as national government departments, SAPS and community organised structures in enforcing, cleaning and controlling illegal car racing and invasion of city's properties by so-called men of God within the city (City of Johannesburg, 2015:8). This assertion is supported by Body-Gendrots (2012:109) by outlining that MPS in Gauteng specifically in Johannesburg has shifted the inherited and perceived generic traffic duties of municipal police to drastically include by-law regulations, management, control and enforcement into their functions. TMPD has developed by law enforcement Tshwane by-law strategy 2016 which intended to deal with community members, business corporate and individual organisations who are consistently contravening municipal by laws (Tshwane by-law Strategy, 2016).

Van Biljon (2014:144) views the impact of by-law policing implementation as part of preventing crime because it provides the guideline and standard in the behaviour of formal and informal traders operating in the streets of the cities. Furthermore, Van Biljon (2014) maintains that municipal by-laws can be used to control the number of people at a specific place, at a specific time within determined framework.

It is quite clear from the statement that municipal police have a responsibility to enforce by law instructions and orders to constantly pursue compliance of the rule of law within the cities. The sensitive prescripts of how to implement by law framework in the City of Tshwane are explicitly outlined in the City of Tshwane By-law Strategy 2015/2016 which is compelling municipal police officers to implement. Similarly, in Ekurhuleni By-law Strategy (2019) provides the EMPD with by law implementation instruction, plan and strategy to the poverty-stricken rural part of the east rand side of City of Ekurhuleni such as Zonkizizwe, to deal with illegal dumping of rubbish bins, illegal racing of motor vehicles, making of street fire and causing of harmful smoke in the local authority.

Municipal police are being empowered by the Criminal Procedure Act as peace officers to enable them to enforce the rule of law on all incidents and events not complying with the city council's orders and privileges (Craythorne, 2006:326). This empowerment on the metro police officers assists them in executing search, stop and seizure functions on any suspected individual in possession of tool, instrument and machine prohibited in terms of the city by-law regulations and the general rule of law.

Roesch, Zapf and Hart (2010:242) denote that in the MPS of Boston and New York cities in the USA metro police officers are used to deal with the social disorder such as cultural, religious, moral and racial diversity that are troubling the USA than combating the real crime as enemy.

3.4.3 Crime prevention role of metro police

The Constitution places the crime reduction policing responsibilities to SAPS as the only institution to ensure that all citizens live in violence-free society, protection and securing of citizen's belongings and investigation of any criminal activity. Montesh (2011:19) mentions that despite the formulation of metro police by government to assist SAPS in controlling crimes, there are still serious challenge in terms of crime prevention role on municipal police. Crime prevention role rests with the SAPS, but the metro police could assist in the criminal prevention strategic planning and implementations. Sections 64 E of the SAPS Act outlines crime prevention as among the role ought to be performed by the MPS when executing policing functions.

The White Paper outlines the crime prevention role of municipal police as visible policing through foot and vehicle patrols and controlling of traffic at intersections. Accordingly, the NCPS outlines specific crime prevention mandate for local government to perform which is to facilitate and uphold interagency on crime prevention responsibilities within the local authorities. Mokoena (2007:8) asserts that crime prevention as a policing function is supposed to be performed by metro police officer in terms of SAPS Act. While Rauch et al. (2001:19) argue that the municipal police in South Africa is self-governing with regards to crime prevention through environmental design and development of their own municipal by law regulations.

MPS's role and responsibility in South Africa in terms of amended SAPS Act includes the crime prevention within the streets of the municipal zone (Hiss, Horner, Pressler & Swanepoel, 2009:145). Pressler, Saner and Wasserfall (2009:4) outline crime prevention function of municipal police in terms of the Act as strictly focusing on environmental design, visible policing and patrolling the city centre. In contrast, Malherbe, Day, Cornell, Seedt and Suffla (2020:5) concur with Pressler, Saner and Wasserfall (2009:4), by mentioning that the City of Cape Town (CoCT) is designed in a manner that can strategically accommodate and

aligned demonstrators into a meaningful with good town planning that assist in managing and controlling the protest violence.

Burger (2007:111) denotes that for SAPS to win a crime fight game against heavily armed thieves, it is imperative resources from other law enforcers such as metro police within the big cities. There is silent crime prevention and reduction direction with regards to the extent through which metro police should play because crime prevention includes crime investigation, intelligence and preservation which is solemnly responsibility of SAPS (Rauch, et al. 2001:18). That crime control responsibility in the municipal authority stated last in terms of functions to be performed by the MPS it gives strong indications that it is not their day-to-day duty to carry out (Madihlaba, 2018:2).

According to Van Biljon (2014:5), the crime-prevention role of the MPD is centred on the perception of discouragement through noticeable patrolling and is rooted within the law-enforcement functions of the division. The patrolling of the street as a crime reduction function of the metro police division forms 70% of operational level members and 63% of supervisory level members (Madihlaba, 2018:136). These numbers suit and agree perfectly with the notion that describes the crime deterrence role of MPS as monitoring and patrolling the streets of the city.

It is very crystal clear that the crime reduction and combating mandate of the Republic of South Africa rests with the SAPS (Newham, 2006:2). This crime prevention instruction is also outlined in the Constitution, section 205 (3) and the SAPS Amendment Act of 1998. Similarly, Madihlaba (2018:10) concur with Newham, (2006:2) and Van Biljon (2014:16) that the crime avoidance duty of metropolitan police is intentionally downgraded to the mere common crime combating awareness, education, mapping and crime deterrence through conservational strategy as defined in terms of White Paper.

The SAPS Amendment Act requires municipal police to perform crime prevention and combating tasks to get permission and authorisation in terms of law from

national or provincial chief of SAPS. Bushnell (2017:30) reports that Australia in terms of crime combating and reduction is counted among the heavily police populated nations in the industrialised sphere. Conversely, MacDonald (2015:74) asserts that USA crime prevention part of police on the street is divisive among the black African Americans and white American citizens. The whole world witnessed the divisive police system witnessed the divisive police system on the 26 of May 2020, whereby white police officer kneeled on George Floyd's neck until he succumbed to death.

Ochoa and Torres (2019:225) outline the role of municipal police in the Mexican city of Michoacán as constantly patrolling and cleaning drug users, drug trafficking, syndicates and prostitutions in the street's day and night. Malherbe, Day, Cornell, Seedt and Suffla (2020:933) concur with MacDonald (2015:74) by asserting that even now USA police like South Africa and UK are still utilising a structure of army style of crime reducing and controlling especially during marches and violence protests.

3.5 DO METRO POLICE IN SOUTH AFRICA REQUIRE ADDITIONAL LEGAL POWERS TO HELP THE SAPS TO COMBAT CRIME?

It is frustrating for top and junior city police officials as they are unable to allocate municipal police resources in an identified crime hotspot owing to party-political directives and political meddling that are serving politicians than servicing the community. Gauteng region has three well equipped metropolitan police forces (TMPD, EMPD & JMPD) that are interrelated in terms of borderlines but are ineffective owing to legislative obstacles deterring them from contributing to crime investigation, sampling and intelligence. Another failure derailing metro police crime reduction objective is for the Constitution and the SAPS Act permitting the civil servant (City Boss) to control metro police department.

Lack of authority by metro forces directorates in ensuring that the detained suspects are secured in the municipal holding jail cells for further investigation of what really happened is a serious legal failure that is not satisfying the will of justice. As of June 2020, there are number of criminal elements perpetuated to

the children and women in South Africa while SAPS are unable to deal with them at once (Maisela, 2020:4). There is a serious need of additional legal powers to the city local police to offload the case workload from the SAPS. The powers conferred on metro police are not outlined in the Constitution, as is the case with the commands of the SAPS (Van Biljon, 2014:4). The only mention made to metropolitan policing is a formal context for its formation, powers in terms of Criminal Procedure Act, NRTA Act, traffic functions and bylaw control with little information on crime prevention. The legal framework on the formulation of metro police and powers vested on their policing operations are incompletely detailed in Section 64 of the SAPS Act (1995). The crime prevention mandate of the metro police is limited to social crime prevention and crime prevention through environmental design (Kole, 2015).

The crime prevention obligation still belongs to the SAPS as is being detailed in the Constitution and SAPS Act of 1995, and that the MPD should provide resources and workforce when dealing with it. Powers and responsibilities vested to municipal police in terms of crime reduction is limited to inspection of municipal buildings, patrolling of roads and monitoring of illegal land occupations (Montesh, 2011:9). According to Rauch et al. (2001:19), crime reduction and control of a municipal police falls within the management of the SAPS. The Criminal Procedure Act (1977) defines the powers and responsibilities of peace officers which among others include the metro police officers. In terms of the Criminal Procedure Act (Act 51 of 1977), any commands exercised by metro police officers without required document as promulgated by this Act will have no lawful significance. Similarly, Mkhabela (2007:8) supports the views of Rauch et al. (2001:19) by indicating that the powers vested on metro police officers especially on crime prevention is through by law enforcement in the streets of the city.

Metro police need extra powers in terms of investigating criminal activities, collection of evidence, confronting of criminal syndicates and also preservation of evidence in court of law. Montesh (2011:19) indicates investigation of crime as among wanted additional authorities for metro police to be able to search, examine, gather and conduct crime prevention tasks within the identified South

African municipal hotspots. These include the power to preserve evidence, have their own municipal holding cells and being allowed to analyse, assess, qualify and store exhibit collected in a crime scene.

Madihlaba (2018:143) argues that clear and specified crime prevention powers, responsibilities, authorities and instructions need to be assigned to the metro police division in South Africa for them to implement crime combating role in the municipalities. Jaftha and Bawa (2020:1) ask a critical question on whether City of Cape Town municipal police division are supposed to have investigative powers like their SAPS counterpart. Van Biljon (2014:4) in 2007, the former City of Cape Town Mayor mentioned that SAPS should be seen and understood as the only police authority authorised by the law to conduct crime prevention and combating.

Part of the Constitution and SAPS Act have dedicated the investigation of crime, crime secret services, intelligence section and collection of evidence as a solemnly the responsibility of national police not the municipal police function. This is the founding and concluding challenge in preventing crime in South Africa, since most of crimes are happening in the local municipal area where metro police are well situated in terms of security resources. Independent municipal police service from political influence, direction and intervention as prescribed by the Constitution and SAPS Act will lead a clean police service that stands with the people not against them (Rowe, 2020:17). Political recognition by the Constitution and other legal regulations on policing management is causing a devastating and poor executive management in general policing sector. Moatshe (2017:1) states that former Chief of TMPD was placed on suspension based on defying Democratic Alliance (DA) instruction to remove disruptive African National Congress (ANC) councillors from the State of City Address (SOCA), but later reinstated. In early 2017, TMPD Chief of Police was fired by the Democratic Alliance (DA) administration as part of the Mayor's notion to employ career police officer (Goba, 2017:1). In contrast, Zulu (2020:1) indicates that Chief of Police in JMPD few months after ANC won back the city of Johannesburg. These resignations of Chief of Police are viewed as forced out of office within the

metropolitan cities by political analysts, which then fuels the rhetoric of political interference in policing division that is destabilising the momentum to finish policing programmes, plans and strategies within the municipal terrains.

These political influence and intervention are destabilising and disjoining the metro police functions and operations because there will be a new management style on crime prevention programmes, strategies and standards. The authoritative power needed from Parliament through enactment of new legislation commanding metropolitan police divisions in crime combating and disobedience of political interference and intervention (Madihlaba, 2018:146).

It is opportune to agree with the argument that crime prevention and combating is the obligation of the national police force as outlined in terms of the Constitution. However, effective training is key to the functions of all the stakeholders to crime prevention as outlined next in the case of metro police officers.

3.6 THE REQUIRED TRAINING LEVEL OF METRO POLICE OFFICERS FOR CRIME PREVENTION

According to the researcher's knowledge as Senior Superintendent in the TMPD for the past 18 years, TMPD was offering a six months metro police training for new recruits in 2000 which comprised of road traffic law, domestic violence, illegal traders, firearm training and common law ideologies. In contrast, the present duration of municipal police service training in South Africa is 12 months, consisting of street traffic signs, laws, defensive and small piece of legal principles that partly concentrate on city by-laws and general common regulations. It is lamentable that the crime combating and reduction education on crime-stopping models, law-breaking patterns, wrongdoing statistical records and behavioural attitudes of criminals are not being taught at the metro police colleges.

The SAPS must allow town council police to facilitate police crime prevention development and teaching on their council police schools not on the SAPS

grounds. The professed concept that urban police are trained in the crime policing codes and system is not true because they concentrate on road laws and implementation of municipal ordinances. Metropolitan police officers are not trained in criminality probing, gathering of law-breaking proof and approval to detain accused persons after captured. The current basic training provided by the South Africa Police College and city police is a one-year process as stipulated in terms of the SAPS Act, protocol and standards. This training seeks to advance police section for them to be able to deal with day-to-day criminal activity.

SAPS recruits are being taught on code of conduct, discipline, and how to combat crime and create the rule of law that seeks to push for peace and harmony as outlined in the Constitution. Police officers during the apartheid era in South Africa including the municipal security forces were comprehensive in terms of the mandatory police training standard and procedure which included the infantry exercise, infantry fighting and conventional police skills (Duignan & Gann, 1991:76). According to Fox, van Wyk and Fourie (1998:9), the police training in South Africa focuses on wrongdoing and unlawful related courses which contribute to the police psychological preparation and knowledgeable abilities on how to approach and arrest criminals during the day and night.

In contrast, Newham, Masuku and Dlamini (2006:16) posit that since post-apartheid regime the SAPS propelled their policing recruitment, skills, knowledge and training development approach towards eliminating poverty in the community by running employment programmes where they end up disregarding police, law or criminal justice diploma or degree educational status as a prerequisite for recruits entry-level.

Frankel (2013:5) supports the views of Fox, van Wyk and Fourie (1998:9) and Newham, Masuku and Dlamini (2006:16) by indicating that police in South Africa are not professionally well trained in crime combating and prevention skill in dealing with ever demanding policing function such as strikers, protestors and uncontrolled crowd. The Marikana massacre where the large number of miners, security officers and police officers were killed was obvious that police still used

deep-rooted techniques and approaches in dealing with crowd control, intelligence gathering approach and interpretation. However, moreover, political interference still plays a major prominent role in influencing policing operations and directions.

Reynecke and Fourie (2001:84) agree with Fox, van Wyk and Fourie (1998:9) that policing subject, courses and curriculum that are being taught in the police college focused on the matters involving criminal elements, crime-related laws, regulations and standards such as law of evidence and interpretation of police regulation. Police corporal presence was the order of the day, hence were strictly focused on physical fitness of new and old police recruits to bring back police discipline. Police officers in South Africa nowadays attend a year police training course, which comprises police practice, police and criminal evidence act, the road traffic act, and a South African regulations and police ethical code (Pressler, Saner & Wasserfall, 2009:75).

According to Madihlaba (2018:109) municipal police department totally lacks similar training on the participation in the prevention of crime. Madihlaba (2018), further outlines the current training programme provided at metropolitan police colleges should be revised, analysed and better qualified as many metro police officers feel that the relevant crime prevention training is provided to the minimal. Metropolitan police departments should observe how the SAPS are training their crime prevention officers. They must have a qualified police officers with at least a degree in law, police practice, police science, security management and criminology, then adapt and familiarise themselves with methods or programmes that are advanced in dealing with criminal activity.

Van Biljon (2014:142) stipulates that during the year 2012, the foundation basis of the Tshwane metro police teaching plan it was over almost sixty-four weeks. The metro police groundwork training in South Africa is conforming to the two lawfully listed authorisations which are acknowledged and listed in the Further Education and Training Certificate (FETC), the Road Traffic Law Enforcement and the Law Enforcement Skills Development Programme.

Madihlaba (2018:110) agrees with Masuku (2006) that both the South African Police and metro police training field needs to be up to date in the crime prevention standards, ideologies, philosophies, programmes, and regulations based on the demanding policing operations. A well-equipped and standardised police training positioned with well-versed crime prevention theories that will improve metro policing attitudes towards crime-related teaching and training concept from well researched phased is needed.

It is remarkable to note that, despite the point that municipal police divisions are directed to participate in the reduction of crime prevention in terms of the SAPS Act, but is clear that crime prevention training, experience, qualifications and teaching are not provided in their respective colleges since is the prerogative of SAPS in terms of the SAPS Act (Montesh, 2011:19). Montesh (2011) further indicates that education and training programme, road traffic law enforcement training, police ethics, law of evidence and procedure is conducted at police academy over a boundary of twelve months in which prospective metropolitan police recruits are skilled to combat crime, enforce rule of law and road policing within a specific municipal authority.

Kuzmarov (2012:9) asserts that police training in United State of America in the years 1290-d has drastically changed to Overseal Internal Security Program (OISP), until now they introduced state department with the intention of uplifting their local police and internal security structures. While Brandl (2018:94) argues that in the 21st century period the police training was focused on the motor vehicle driving certificate, identification of documents and crime-related issues within the United Stated of America the no prison sentence records, appropriate height and weight and the diploma or degree from university were placed as a requirement for police entry level. While Chaurasia (2003:8) supports the opinion of Brandl (2018:94) by pointing out that in India, police training is focused explicitly on the regulations that seek to advance monetary and manufacturing growth of the country, so that they can be able to tackle illicit financial activities and other organised crimes conducted by the clever syndicates.

There are no specific requirements listed in terms of the criteria of crime prevention training on the side of the Indian police. While Kratcoski and Das (2007:60) are of the view that in Thailand police forces require police officers to have diploma in police science or related law degree as a criterion during recruitment and very experienced knowledgeable officers to deal with ever-increasing criminal activities. Kratcoski and Das (2007) maintain that Thailand Police Institution (TPI) is also providing bachelor's degree in police administration which is acquired in a four-year programme by Thai police officials from their Police Academy.

Coester, Marks and Meyer (2008:12) backing Kratcoski and Das (2007:60) state that the prerequisite police training for national police in Denmark is coupled with diploma in criminology that highlights crime prevention as a most important course. Kratcoski and Das (2007:60) further outline that effective and efficient crime prevention and combating police training must include either a three-year university degree in either law, social work, psychology, sociology, police discipline or managements.

It is very clear that when compared to the crime prevention standard of recruitment in Asia, USA and Europe is far above the South African police. The standard of policing requirements in terms of preferred training criteria and recruitment in South Africa especially on crime prevention is not mentioned, but only direct functions and responsibilities as outlined in the SAPS Act. The academic crime combating training criteria and requirements in the police manuals is not clearly stipulated in the South African policing context (Madihlaba, 2018:112).

In the global world it can be noted by the researcher that, in the international federations such as Denmark, London, and America as outlined above crime prevention is regarded as a specialised discipline that requires educated police officer to perform crime prevention duties with at least diploma or a degree.

Kratcoski supports the crime-related training sentiment of Kratcoski and Das (2007:60) and Das (2007:60) support the crime-related training sentiment (Klockars, Ivkovic & Hahefield 2004:4) that the police utilise extensive strength to the innocent and vulnerable citizens unnecessarily so, when executing their crime stop operations. The use of power to mostly disadvantaged and weak populations shows a lack of adequate training in combating and reducing crime in a lack of adequate training in combating and reducing crime in a lack of adequate training in combating and reducing crime in the in neighbourhood.

3.7 RESOURCES AND SPECIALISED SERVICES IN THE METRO POLICE DEPARTMENTS TO COMBAT CRIME

Town police divisions were established self-sufficiently to have their own progressive resource models and expertise, which were perceived to close holes opened by SAPS in reducing crime. The unfortunate part is that council resources are shared equally by all town council departments focusing on their service delivery obligation. The allocation of service budget in the metropolitan police to buy new and adequate vehicles, firearms, conduct social crime education and other day-to-day tools of trade is insufficient (Madihlaba, 2018). Urban police officials are required to respond and deflect the service delivery protests within the streets with minimum resources.

There are under-resourced and untrained crime prevention specialised units within the city police that are powerless to deal with ever increasing criminal syndicates. Metro police forces have formed drug, crowd control, tactical response teams, land invasion and other units without Parliament permission. They also lack the required crime combating knowledge and essential policing resources that are delaying better justice for society.

Farmer (1984:2) points out that the police resources and resource allocation decision-making are critical for police division because it affords them strength and power tool to effectively patrol the streets on a daily basis. While Lamb (2018:939) opines that in the early days of 2000s, SAPS formed a little army within the police forces who were specialising with the different crime incidents

perpetuated by criminal gangs in the taxi industry, bank robbers, demonstrators and power sabotages especially in KwaZulu-Natal, Gauteng and Western Cape Province.

Lamb (2018:939) further mentions that huge number of vehicles, budget and police official members with distinctive knowledge, experience and high level of educational accomplishment were brought into the police system. For police management to strategically plan to curb and control a crime on a particular area where police need vehicles, good financial allocation and deployment of experienced special police officers to directly achieve the result. The struggle of chasing high profile criminal syndicates with outdated and speed-less vehicles while police generals cruise to offices with state of the art cars which belong to the SAPS (Tau, 2019:6). This demonstrates a no sense and priority from police management in terms of resource allocations with the intention of curbing criminal element within the community.

Shaw (2016:991) mentions that the ANC administration has not changed their policing methods and techniques inherited from National Party (NP) in terms of policing system which was properly ruthless with poor resources. The present administration is still using outside services such as armed services and other law enforcement interventions to deal with different policing functions especially in a more described and demanding policing operations. Lamb (2018:939) concurs with Shaw (2016:991) that since 2000, the Department of Police has developed the specialised units that are revolutionary and guerrilla policing divisions to be posted on a seriously crime concentrated places in the province of KwaZulu Natal Province and Western Cape Province. Specialised units such as the Rapid Deployment Stability Force (RDSF), National Intervention Unit (NIU), and Tactical Response Team (TRT) were established to deal with related criminal elements within the South African communities.

The South African Government after 1994 democratic dispensation, has set up the NCPS as a policing resource policy to deal with criminal elements within the community which will require all levels of government and organised non-

governmental organisations (NGOs) to work together for implementation (Lamb, 2018:938). Police exists in terms of the regulations to conduct and execute more than one crime reduction and combating responsibilities. They are also expected to perform general functions; so, allocation of resources to policing is very important as alluded by Villiers (2009:30).

Coleman (2012:365) points out that the efficient allocation of resources for police department assist in preventing, combating and reducing criminal activities by criminal syndicates, professional thieves and ordinary individuals. Allocation of resources such as vehicles, uniforms, firearms, ammunitions and fiscal monetary play a very fundamental role in policing functions (Zhu, Alpcan, Panaous, Tambe & Casey, 2016:19). According to Siegal, Van de Bunt and Zaitch (2003:143), the resource allocation is devoted and directed to the internal security protection of the political leaders than concentrated on combating and reducing criminal element in Asia. Gottschalk (2008:75) mentions that resource allocation and provisions to the police forces play a crucial role in reinforcing forces to patrol the streets, combat crime and gather relevant information for criminal prosecution. In addition, Corder (2014:343) indicates that the Netherlands police division has invested a large scale of their police budget to acquire qualified statisticians to assess and interpret criminal element statistics for them, to plan properly and allocate extra vehicles and police members on identified hotspot areas.

These analysed statistics assist them to planning accurately on the number of vehicles, police members, budget, and tools of the trade, firearms and ammunitions needed on a specific crime-related area in terms of police deployment.

Byeon, Kim and Lee (2018:183) similarly concur with Siegal, Van de Bunt and Zaitch (2003:143) that South Korea, which is well known for frequent community demonstrations, is allocating more police resources deal with ever increasing protests, anti-policy demonstrations. Byeon, Kim and Lee (2018) stipulate that the Korean government is world recognised as among the dictatorial form of government which is allocating more resources such as budget to police

departments to enable them to control and manage ever coming society's protests and crowd control owing to their implemented strategies of governance.

In contrast, in the city of Michoacán in Mexico, which is known for drugs harvesting and planting, the community members came together in large numbers to protest against drugs and drug trafficking syndicates which are seen as normal by police (Ochoa & Torres, 2019:255). British police in England like SAPS has established British Transport Police Unit to deal specially with the increasing suicide that was happening in the railway lines (Marzono, Smith, Long, Kisby & Hawton 2016:195). Similarly, in Pakistan, the government has established police force that are intended to deal with the countering terrorism in Khyber Pakhtunkhwa.

3.8 SUMMARY

The crime prevention and combating role of municipal police is not clearly pointed in terms of the prescribed legislation because metro police officers are not executing this crime stopping function as perceived by society. Service delivery in terms of crime combating by municipal police is not the priority in the country. It is crystal clear that the role of metro police in crime reduction and prevention has been reduced to second best (Montesh, 2011:9). The obstacles that are hampering the crime prevention role of metro police were identified explained in this chapter. Among others are resource allocation, resource shortages, lack of investigation powers, lack of crime prevention training, lack of qualified instructors, political interference and not limited to others. On the other hand, the literature review in this chapter has shown that there is a serious need to provide legal powers to the metro police so that they independently deal with crime from the street until the sentencing of the accused. There is also a need for resources such as qualified personnel, vehicles, financial status, equipment, tools of trade and other resources such as better crime prevention strategies, standards, systems and models that can assist the metro police division in dealing with criminal elements. Therefore, the necessity of special officers who are fit and

knowledgeable in terms of crime reduction and moreover, educated forces that are operating within the prescribed laws of the country are needed.

CHAPTER 4: LEGISLATIVE AND THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK

4.1 INTRODUCTION

Metropolitan town policing is a freshly adorable policing intervention on the indigenous municipality landscaping of South African safety and security context. In addition, metro police status varies from the national government police with regards to policing instruction, powers and operations. A significant topic in these deliberations appears to be denotation of the word crime prevention in the location of municipal policing domain. It is imperative to discover a proper connotation for crime prevention in the angle of town council policing; it is obligatory to conclude to what degree do local council police part could take in the crime-prevention spectacle.

As it stands, the regulating governing framework on municipal policing has classified lawful framework within which it is projected to function. However, it seems like the only applicable notion to this effect will be to investigate the intended framework on crime role of the city council police – to the later conclusion of an legal existent basis that will reveal the lawful obligations levied on the metro policing service. It also may disclose features of a municipal city police which can devour an influence on the crime-prevention performance of the MPDs within the South African local level setting.

This chapter therefore, envisioned to generate a flawless image of the commitments, tasks, obligations and supremacies imposed on an urban police division by statute, and the potential outcome that these onuses, accountabilities, burdens and controls may have on the crime-prevention abilities of metropolitan police services within the country. It is through determined legislations by parliament to enable the South African government and its core administration to operate effectively and efficiently.

These developed guiding systems play a directive role in channelling government processes to be followed when in need moving in the right direction.

4.2 STATUTORY FRAMEWORK FOR MPS IN SOUTH AFRICA

It has been proven with deep regret that the real purpose of metro police is precisely concentrated on the enforcement of municipal ordinances and management of road traffic regulations (Burger, 2007:06). In addition, Super (2013:20) mentions that municipal police organ legally operates under tight series of confusing power and censored legislation, making difficult for municipal council police to combat crime consistently and intensively. Against this, context that several South African cities formed perceived vigorous law enforcement agencies within the local spheres of government with the view of crime combating and policing objectives. The research study on the statutory framework and basis of the intentional existence of metro police was touched but is still not clear even now in terms of the city council police (Van Biljon, 2014:8).

Similarly, Madihlaba (2018:45) outlines some of the partially cast-off and standing general policing statutory law that are being agreed as a side bone of city council police presence such as SAPSs Act as amended and the antique forty four (44) years Criminal Procedure Act . Furthermore, the Municipal Systems Act No.32 of 2000 allows the municipal departments to enact regulations to deal with the municipal by-law restrictions, directions, inspections, and penalties. MPD is one of those municipal directorates empowered in terms of the Municipal System Act, ordinances, policies and regulations or under their appointment as police structure to conclude compliance, inspections, enforcements and issue penalties to the offenders.

4.2.1 Criminal Procedure Act No. 51 of 1977 (CPA)

In relations to part 334 of the Criminal Procedure Act No.51 of 1977 (CPA), the minister may, by notification in the government gazette, affirm certain officials, by virtue of their organisation responsibilities, to be peace officers within the region identified in the notice, for the purpose of applying the powers and duties of a peace officer to the degree as it is defined in the bill.

As indicated previously, any official of the metropolitan police is a peace officer. According to the CPA, indicates that an official of municipal police department may apply all the powers convened upon a peace officer in terms of this Act. These commands include the powers to examine, search out, put in custody, arrest, give administrative warnings and evaluate bodily structures.

4.2.2 Local Government Bargaining Council (LGBC) by metro police officials

One of the most important organisational rights to metro police officers as employees of the municipality concerned has the right to strike in terms of MSA No.32 of 2000. In terms of the MSA, Local Government Bargaining Council (LGBC) through “Municipal Collective Agreement” entitles every municipal employee as members of South African Municipal Workers Union (SAMWU) and Independent Municipal and Allied Trade Union (IMATU) to bargain and negotiate collectively in respect of salaries and relations and circumstances of service.

The Labour Relations Act No.66 of 1995 and collective agreement slab out how these employee privileges are to be implemented and which applicable stuffs get negotiated at the applicable and suitable stages for metro police officers. The stages of collective bargaining council take place on three (3) points, which is the central council, divisional and municipal stages. Metro police members as municipal employees are entitled to join one or both of the established union representations. Furthermore, they are bound by the agreed collective agreement. The signed mutual agreements in terms of Labour Relations Act allow the metro police officers as employees of the municipality and member of the existing municipal union to conduct legal strike, demonstration, go slowly in performing a work if their agreement is not fulfilled.

4.2.3 Controlling body within the Municipal Police Department (MPD)

City council shall employ a police control body comprising council buddies and/or any other individual the municipality concerned considers to be part of civilian oversight of the municipal police services concerned as directed by MSA No.32

of 2000. According to Verma, Das and Abraham (2013:215), the oversight police committee has an obligatory supervisory mission to bring the police units correctly into the books and respond to issues raised against their behaviours. The group has managerial powers to ensure that city police uphold and preserve police objective towards realisation of necessary policing standards and principles. The assignment of any controlling policing body is to hold the police accountable and responsive on its behavioural actions (Archbold 2013:126).

4.2.4 Independent Police Investigative Directorate Act No.1 of 2011 (IPID)

Archbold (2013:126) highlights that the South African democratic government has created an Independent Police Investigation Directorate (IPID) Act in Parliament during 2011 to scrutinise the harmful activities, arrogance, attitude and performance of police, traffic and the municipal police when executing their day-to-day duties. The aims of this Act are:

- to provide effect to the provision of section 206(6) of the Constitution creation and allocating roles to the division on state and regional level;
- to ensure autonomous and self-controlled oversight of the SAPS metropolitan police services;
- to put in line provincial tactical intentions with that of the national office to boost the operation of the division;
- to offer for self-governing and neutral investigation of known illegal crimes allegedly committed by officials of the SAPS and municipal police services;
- to decide disciplinary sanctions in respect of members of the SAPS and municipal police services resulting from inquiries led by the directorate;
- to bring within reach relations between the division and the Secretariat; and
- to boost responsibility and transparency by the SAPS.

An extra tasking of neutral oversight is provided by the IPID which ensures sovereign oversight on the SAPS and MPS, by guiding self-determining and unbiased investigations of unlawful deeds committed by officers of either the

SAPS or a metro police (Verma, et al. 2013:215). Once such investigations have been concluded, suitable sanctions, intended at the deterrence of related lawless actions are articulated in terms of the IPID Act No.1 of 2011.

4.2.5 Media as a police watchdog

Coetzee (2020) mentions that the harsh implementation of coronavirus lockdown regulations in South Africa from March 2020 by police and the soldiers has put much cruelty, a cause of harm, brutality and threat to the community members especially the most vulnerable ethnic groups. Media fraternity has pushed the human rights groups, government and police watchdogs to press charges against the police seen viciously acting decisively against the South African population. Similarly, Ncube and Jeiroudi (2020) echo the same sentiment of Coetzee (2020) by mentioning that ruthlessness behaviour is perpetrated by the heartless police officials towards the homeless, vulnerable and defenceless people around the big cities of South African society.

Social media have nurtured the society in terms of broadcasting that exposed the police on bad treatment and brutality on desperate citizens (Rogers, 2006:138). The media as a silent and independent watchdog entity consistently reported crimes committed by police, traffic officers and soldiers in South Africa which were witnessed during COVID-19 lockdown. Police forces were tormenting and bodily distressing some communities (Ishmail, 2020). Media recently played a crucial role in ensuring that it reports on police raid in Athlone crime striking hotspots and provided feedback outcomes on several criminal elements happening on the ground but also broadcast police bad behaviour towards citizens (Safe City Community Safety and Crime Prevention Plan (SCCCPP), 2010-2013: 6). Reporters will always have a benefit of taking a last round in what they will print since they solitary broadcast whatever they intend to report on (Rogers, 2006:138).

On the other hand, Kole (2015:163) mentions that the newspapers always generate a fabricated image about criminality, culprits of law breaking and the

casualties of crime and, consequently, culminate in providing a complete altered story as of the real one. In this illustration, it is crystal clear that it is around respectable moral code in relation to truthful journalism of what is popular in the public domain. From views highlighted, it is obvious that media fraternity can assist in reporting bad police behaviour during efforts of combating crime when conducting searches, confiscations, arrests and at the same time create public and police awareness on how to follow procedures when effecting principle standards and regulations as prescribed by law.

At the height of a frigid Cape Town winter, an innocent black man was forcefully expelled from his home by law enforcement agents, and that was blatantly apathetic towards their victim's well-being and dignity (Ncube and Jeiroudi, 2020).

4.3 THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK

The following theories guided the study: community partnership policing theory; obstacles of community partnership policing theory; SCPT; and crime prevention through environmental design.

4.3.1 Community Partnership Policing Theory (CPPT)

Part 214 of the Interim Constitution of the Republic of South Africa, Act No. 200 of 1993 indicates that SAPS Act No.68 of 1995, IDP, NCPS and other governmental policies were developed to allow the public to be involved in crime reporting, alertness and eradication of crime. This has led the creation of formal society's policing structures that work in partnership with police agencies, security companies and business corporate and general members of the public in dealing with unlawful expropriation of individual properties, assets and cause of harm (Kole, 2015:76). These initiatives cemented the intention of police to recruit passionate and willing individuals within the society to be actively part of legitimate society's crime prevention group (Minnaar, 2005:94). Community policing structures within the country were formulated to assist police in uprooting

criminal elements especially in the urban areas of the big cities such as Tshwane, Ekurhuleni and Joburg.

It can also be worth asserting that the community in the previously vulnerable black townships, rural areas and squatter camps are now part of society's policing partnership structures that patrolled during dark hours and handed over apprehended criminals to the police stations (Mabunda, 2014:6). Burger (2011:103) agrees with Minnaar (2005:94), that the governing party had formulated a legislation that give effort and privileges on the structuring of community partnership policing to deal fully with issues concerning criminal components and apply themselves within the confines of the rules.

In Brazil during 1997, in the city of Sao Paulo – a community private corporation initiative was formed in the name of Institute Sao Paulo Against Violence (ISPAV). This policing partnership composed of scholars; people from the public; groups from business corporate; private security and media forums (Kole, 2015:84). On the contrary, Mokoena (2007:97) posits that Botswana crime squad has recently formed community policing approach over which they deal with criminal elements by introducing community neighbourhood watch with other stakeholders to address crime. Furthermore, this community part taking policing ideology benefited the Canadian people on interacting with other members of society on crime reduction matters tremendously (Hyde, 2002).

4.3.2 Obstacles of Community Partnership Policing Theory

According to Kole (2015:83), stakeholders such as community, metro police and private security who are involved in crime busting feel that national police are given more policing controlling, management and commanding role unnecessary by the SAPS Act and the Constitution. Kole (2015:104) further maintains that the established community policing clusters within the South African context are not yielding better crime combating outcomes as initially intended because of lack of commitment on this society's organisation.

This idea is apparent as soon as one has a look into recent crime information on the police success in crime reduction. These crime informational data demonstrate the only part played by the SAPS in reducing criminal elements within the nation but not mentioning any success partnership with other stakeholders (Kole, 2015). The other most ridiculed challenge that is eating the entire police force mission from the top senior executive to the ground force constable is corruption activities (Newham & Faull, 2011:20).

A South African study by Newham and Faull (2011) shows that almost quarter full of the policing levels and ranks are either taking kickbacks or perpetuating corrupt activities by selling dockets, involved as hit men on taxi, political killings and releasing offenders. In 2019, the South African Police arrested the former Acting Police Commissioner for fraud and corruption, not forgetting the sentencing and prosecution of the former Police Commissioner.

Burger (2006:142) argues that community policing partnership is partially working within a well-organised and modernised particular place where police officers are dedicated and committed than where officers are police and are mocked with bad authoritative policing powers as entrenched in the SAPS Act. Burger (2006) maintains that this stakeholder policing initiatives were introduced but struggling in both the USA and some of part of European countries such as London. In the USA, there are ever fighting on daily basis on police cruelly assaulting, torturing and end up killing black African American people in series fission that which has amplified the hatred among the police versus American citizens. Police in both areas are also the ones getting admirations, performance inspirations while the black community are not even considered when a new police recruits process is unfolding.

According to Bayley (2011:313), police behaviour and relationship with the community is irreparably damaged, unbearable and irretrievably dented because of police power mocking when dealing with issues such as community service protests, minimum use of force, apartheid type of policing actions, and common arrests. These attitudes point out that the society is no longer willing to trust police

in revealing important information that can lead to the arrest of hardcore crime syndicates within the community. Bayley (2011) further maintains that some academia in the USA are teaching different concepts, models, strategies and plans on how to deal with criminal activities in contrary to the police teaching gospel in the police academies. It is very clear that the good policing partnership initiatives, objectives and missions are far within reach owing to lack of loyal trust and pledge from the police.

The top leaders of government specifically in the oversight policing portfolio need to complete a comprehensive study to determine the level of achievement and difficulties associated with community private partnership policing model in South Africa. This will assist in giving progressive feedback and motivational accolades to the deserving community on their policing contribution role in crime reduction like in other parts of the UK (Sullivan, 2002:57).

4.3.3 Assessment of Community Policing Partnership Theory

From the preceding concept of community involvement in policing, it is depressing to note that there are more challenges on partnership policing that are caused by lack of control and management on the part of SAPS. The Department of Police appears not to be putting more interest in ensuring that community crime busting structure is effective, efficient and productive. In most cases, the attitude of SAPS is that they feel like they are reporting to the community while they are employed by the SAPS. On the other hand, metro police units and security companies within the big cities feel discouraged that after they arrested suspects for serious crimes then the following day they are released by SAPS.

The South African government has done extremely well in creating conducive space and doors for various communities, NGOs and businesspeople to form crime policing initiatives within the communities. There have been a series of easy procedures and processes on how to report a criminal element within the neighbourhood. There have been guiding principle in abundance that simplified

how citizens can address drug trafficking, child bullying and suspected home breakings. The most important part in community policing partnership is the trust, respect and dedication to serve the public without due influence.

Metro police, SAPS, security industry and members of the community must ensure that they work together in addressing criminal behaviours within the inhabitants.

It is worth noting from the above discussion that SAPS is the sole leading sector in terms of ensuring that they are well-structured community partnership policing within a particular area. All partners depend more on reporting to the police while police have the resource shortage crises in terms of vehicles, personnel and as a result, fail to take arrested suspects to the police stations from the community. The police are being heavily burdened in terms of crime prevention issues which they fail on minor tasking such as writing of sworn statements and petty crimes can be done by metro police. Obviously, in the new policing method where SAPS have sole control in the fresh policing innovation, there will be an abuse of powers and lack of efficiency.

4.3.4 SCPT

The environmental set-up by the local authority or government administration which is better maintained and well developed vastly to make it impossible for lawbreakers to commit crimes in a particular residential area (Felson & Boba, 2010:200). In contrast, Clarke (1997:27) describes SCPT as a reduced situational likelihood location in the dwelling places that attract would-be criminals to commit criminal activities.

The SCPT model involves setting up several physical security control tools such as the erection of perimeter palisades in terms of the minimum information standards, provision of streets lighting, close circuit television (CCTV) cameras and intruder alarm system to deter, detect and delay-free crime zone movement of perpetrators (Kole, 2015:10). Kole (2015) further postulates that the fitting of boom gates in major entrances for admission regulation, fitting together

electronic biometric identification system and fitting of automated motion detectors which will be monitored and patrolled by the hired contracted private security personnel as part of situational crime reduction system.

The high-tech situational crime reduction method can be linked to the control room of community patrolling private security industry on a specific society's territory and integrated to the local sector policing manager and other municipal law enforcement agency such as MPD (Kole, 2015:107). On the other stage, Masuku (2003:21) agrees with Clarke (1997:27) that the connection of closed-circuit television (CCTV) camera method within a particular apartment plays a security defensive role that which is preferred by the most households because they can be able to record, observe, respond and deter criminals from committing criminal activities.

Rogers (2006:131) outlines situational crime combating as a measure that works relatively in favour of circumstance where there is a security protection at one's business area and there is nothing at the nearby firm. The neighbouring corporation will relatively profit from the availability of the deployed security officers. Rogers (2006) further maintains that positioned security technology such as CCTV tool plays a very important part in SCPT system of the entire covered area.

4.3.5 Obstacles of SCPT

Landman and Liebermann (2005:22) state that the application of CCTV, access control system and turnstile barrier system of situational methods is deemed infringing constitutional right on freedom of movement and invading personal privileges by demanding identity documents. When a camera structure is fitted to video and monitors any person in a private place, it violates his/her personal rights. Kole (2015:109) concurs with Landman and Liebermann (2005:22) that cameras mounted in a specific hotspot area of criminal events especially in a private sitting room can infringe the constitutional rights of individuals. From the above contents, it is clear that placing or access control, alarm system, and camera system is not intended to invade one's rights but to deal with the level of

crime getting out of hand. This monitoring exercise is not intended to deny visitors, workers and citizen's entry but to have understanding as to who comes in and out of their area. These security initiatives are supported in terms of the SAPS Act, NCPS and IDP of the state to be utilised by the community as a security control process as long as it is within the ambit of the law. Local police and metro police authorities will be informed about the admission control and fitting of security cameras measures and assist in ensuring compliance with prescribed council by-law regulations of the city organisation.

4.3.6 Assessment of SCPT

The application of camera and alarm methods primarily employed on parts of households which had been affected by criminal statistical data has yielded better results in the form of low crime rate. According to the researcher, installations of CCTV cameras in the CBD and shopping complexes within the City of Tshwane in the early 2005 to 2016 had produced good results in combating crime, but since the cameras system initiative contract lapsed in 2017 the city is a playground of thugs.

It is evident that in all places where access control, lightings, fencing, camera system and intruder alarms were fitted, the crime rate has drastically come down to the rafters than areas where there are bushes, empty unoccupied buildings and dark open fields. In other communities, they are using boom gates to curb and limit free right of entry and egress without authentication and validation by security officers.

In addition, access monitoring is conducted to document every individual wishing to enter specific houses, land, business or shops for security control purposes. For the past years in the City of Tshwane where security measures were organised in the form of cameras fitted in the CBD and security personnel consistently patrolling the area reports of house breaking to the police stations is very low. This crime initiative enables society to conclude the night and after-

hours security duties and conduct access control at the main entrances of their homes.

The SAPS has also advised regarding the standard of their building perimeter fencing in front of the main gate. Physical security standard that talk to the no obscuring and hindering in terms of building type of fencing and required height of 2.6 meter up (Masuku, 2003:21). This precautionary situational standard has brought forth extreme outcomes in low wrongdoing such as house breaking, and house thefts committed inside the family units. It is worth noting that there are interrelations between three critical crime prevention methods in this study.

That is community partnership policing through patrolling during the night, SCPT theory by controlling or employing security to conduct egress and ingress and, lastly CPTED done by creating a good environmental plan on a particular crime spot suburb or abandoned building area (Kole, 2015:117).

It can therefore be determined that a MPD will have much part to play in this crime-prevention activity by advising city utility authority to install lighting, erect perimeter fencing and clear vegetation every specified period of time, especially during summer (Kole, 2015:109). As metro police are patrolling city hotspots, they have sound displays on crime and wrongdoing data to express to the city designers, engineers and artists that are participating in the town planning. Metro police officers can also play a role in patrolling and controlling entry on all municipal buildings, facilities and open lands flacked as crime hiding spots within the local council regional level.

4.3.7 Crime Prevention Through Environmental Design (CPTED)

Fennelly (2004:66) describes CPTED as appropriate designing of an environmental space that can be fruitfully used as crime-free environmental place for dwelling of our communities in a peaceful and crime-free harmonious way. Unemployment, poor home residential universe, lack of food, lack of, and

maintenance of critical infrastructures need to be addressed daily because if not attended, this will precipitate the increase of crime rate (Burger, 2006:142).

According to Lab (2014:54), the theory of CPTED that critically engages particular abounded environment such as old stadia to be improved to deal with criminal activities caused by lack of government future development plan. Ordinary access control measure, deployment of shopping complex with alarm and camera system which would discourage criminal elements from attaining an illegal admission into the vacant or limited space. The previously neglected open land spaces should be turned to be a child play grounds and resorts (Kole, 2015:111).

The preceding CPTED theories such as installation and deployment of cameras tie with the SCPT. This demonstrates that both ideologies can be carried together as the best crime combating model that can be able to assist in controlling crime. CPTED is more specific in dealing with the environmental standings with the intention of creating a good crime-free zone. The SCPT is more worried about real attended locations that can be crime free and eco-friendly designed to allow every individual to move open with peace.

4.3.8 Obstacles of CPTED Theory

Kole (2015:112) indicates that preservation, repairs, and shopping complexes, school building, community parks, and sports facilities are becoming a losing battle for the authorities. At the same time, this is fuelling the occupation of this white elephant facility by the criminal thugs that are ending terrorising society. The good maintenance of any public facility or open space will discourage occupation or smacking by criminals. Kole (2015) further mentions that lack of community participation and involvement in building and working in those schools and business malls also ensure that citizens lack the will and wish to protect them because they lack the sound belonging feeling of a particular facility. Lack of youth development programmes and projects are also detrimental to societal wellbeing.

4.3.9 Assessment of CPTED Theory

Fennelly (2004:66) argues that CPTED theory is very strategically situated into the local level of government which suits the tasking of the metro police in terms of crime eradication patrols initiatives. It is this level of government, where resources for service delivery are concentrated to eliminate the ever-increasing poverty and homelessness. Mabunda (2014:7) mentions that when the city council departments and their national counterparts provide good quick services to the people there will be a lack of distressed, impoverished, and impaired people sufferings. This will ensure that the communities worry more about what to eat than about the criminal element caused by lack of adequate resource provision.

If not cleared, conventional long grass and bushy fields can play a criminal persuasion and hiding role in committing crimes. It is crucial to put in place a security control method such as streets lights, deployment of neighbourhood watch, fitting of camera devices and construction of perimeter fencing in the most crime disadvantaged city and township areas. It is very pleasant to consider community structures when developing the area in terms of a specific society projects to apply CPTED programmes (Palmiotto, 2011:215). This project will remove young people from the streets and allow them to work in safeguarding the shopping malls, schools and parks. It is critical to start clearing open spaces and changing old streetlights that are not working in a particular location. The installation and connection of integrated camera alarms system on the build-up areas is very real as CPTED. It is also important to investigate the application of grass cutting and forest trimming as part of CPTED and detailed crime reduction method to clear abundant dissented buildings.

4.4 SUMMARY

The statutory rule and principles exist to guide other government institutions in supporting government in ensuring reconciliation and welfare within the community space. These agencies must ensure that they develop structures,

processes, methods, and standards in which criminal activity deflection campaign exists. It is through the SAPS to ensure crime reduction, combating and deterrence work in line with the prescribed legal statute. The importance of the Municipal Finance Management Act, the objective of the MSA, intention of collective agreement and the role play by good leaders in the creation of municipal council police was outlined in detail.

This chapter encompassed the role played by the law in ensuring that the city police complement the SAPS in crime stopping. The other important concepts covered in this chapter is theoretical framework that included CPPT where members of public participate in ending criminal element within the inhabitants. The importance of SCPT was also described in detail looking into the installation of a street's lights, cameras and fencing as a method to combat crime and last but not least the involvement of CPTED.

CHAPTER 5: QUALITATIVE RESEARCH FINDINGS

5.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter deals with qualitative research findings. One-on-one interviews were conducted with the following Metro Police management: Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department TMPD, EMPD and JMPD as selected participants to the study. The participants were engaged as follows:

- TMPD: 15 one-on-one interviews were conducted with the 15 top metro police members.
- EMPD: 15 one-on-one interviews were also conducted with the 15 top metro police members; and
- JMPD: 15 one-on-one interviews were also conducted with the 15 top metro police members.

The researcher had chosen these three municipalities because they are located in the Gauteng Province where there are many economic, business, financial and social opportunities than other provinces. The researcher has been residing in Gauteng Province for the past 25 years of which 18 years working as metro police officer in TMPD. The researcher as an experienced police officer has chosen this province because of the known reported number of crime incidents, activities and accidents that are continuing happening without necessary policing system. These municipalities were selected by the author because they are known as South African economic hub, crime inflated areas, hosting too many migrants and have three biggest municipalities in the South African municipal context. The other reason was that these municipalities received a large, combined billions of rand (estimated R153.1 billion) in terms of allocated budget from the national and provincial government to deliver critical services to millions of people. An estimated R153.1 billion of this budget is significant to deliver necessary water, health, housing, transportation, electricity, and provision of critical infrastructure to the 10 million people of Gauteng Province.

According to the City of Tshwane Budget Speech 2019-2020 announced by councillor responsible for finance, R39.7 billion was allocated to the city's coffers (City of Tshwane Budget Speech, 2019-2020). In the City of Ekurhuleni Municipality, an estimated R48.9 billion was allocated in 2019/2020 financial year (City of Ekurhuleni Budget Speech, 2019-2020). In contrast, the City of Joburg received an estimated R64.5 billion budget (City of Joburg Budget Speech, 2019-2020).

There were 45 participants from management who participated in the telephonic interviews and they were all members from top management of the MPDs from the three Gauteng Province. These 45 participants have many years of experience as metro police officers from lower rank to the management level. They take part in policy decision making, organisational planning and controlling of MPD's operations and administration.

The purpose of interviewing top management is because they are involved in the strategic operational planning part of day-to-day functions in their metropolitan cities. Davies et al. (2011:65) mention that the researcher should make a very decisive conclusion with regards to the location of the study and where interviews are conducted. There are a number of places where the interviews could happen, not excluding the participant's workstation, homes or any area chosen by the respondents. In this study the telephonic interviews were conducted at the participants workstations.

To select and conduct interviews, the researcher had chosen participant's workspace and used telephonic interviews respectfully with all respondents chosen owing to the high infection rate of COVID-19 pandemic during this study period. The aim of selecting their workroom and their own space was to make them feel free to participate owing to COVID-19. The researcher presented the findings in the following way: where multiple participants gave similar responses, the researcher clustered them in that particular response.

In instances participants responded individually on important research aspects, the researcher quoted them verbatim to provide them with voices. The following are the research findings:

5.2 BIOGRAPHICAL INFORMATION

About 45 metropolitan police officers on the senior management level of TMPD, EMPD and JMPD were interviewed in the study. However, participation was voluntary, and all respondents answered all questions. The biographic information is presented in graphs/figures to follow.

5.2.1 Gender representative

There was gender representative as outlined in the Figure 1.1 bar chart graph:

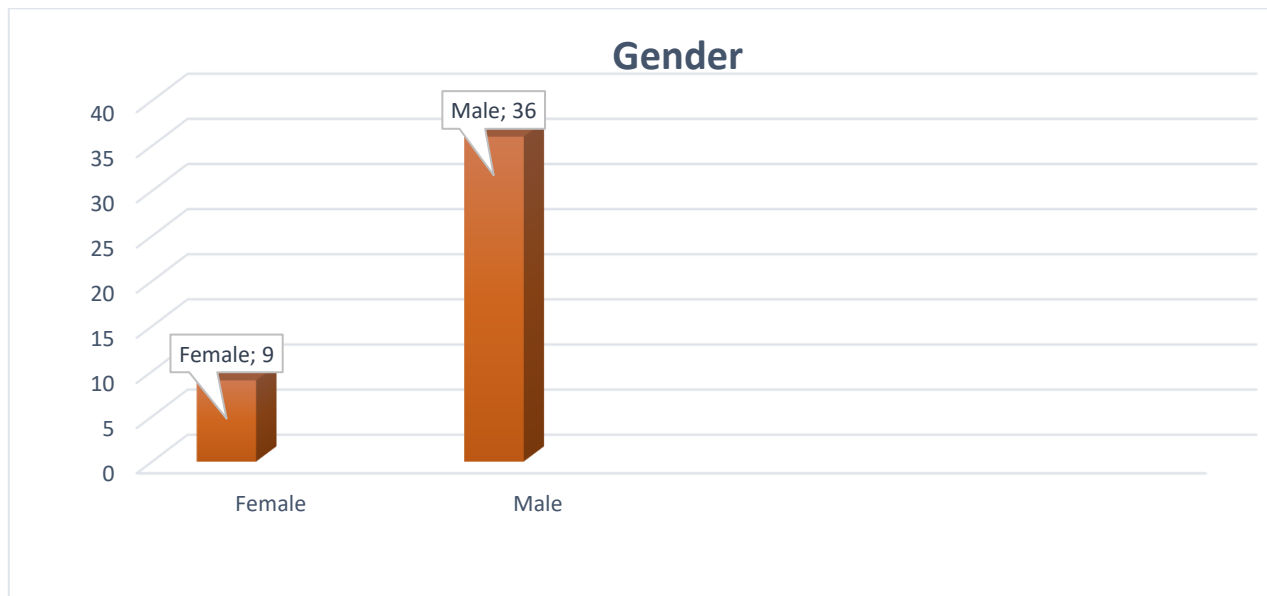


Figure 5.1 Bar chart graph on gender categories of participants

Figure 5.1 depicts the gender category information provided by the participants: nine were females, and 36 were males from the managerial level of TMPD, EMPD and JMPD. Arain (2014:95) mentions that females were not recruited in

large numbers during the olden days as compared to males in the policing system. So, only a few who managed to be in the system applied for promotions.

The reason there are majority of males in the management structure of metro police division could be because males were employed in large numbers and promoted as such from their previous employers as traffic and security officers before they became the metropolitan police officers.

5.2.2 Age categories

The different age categories in the study as shown in Figure 1.2:

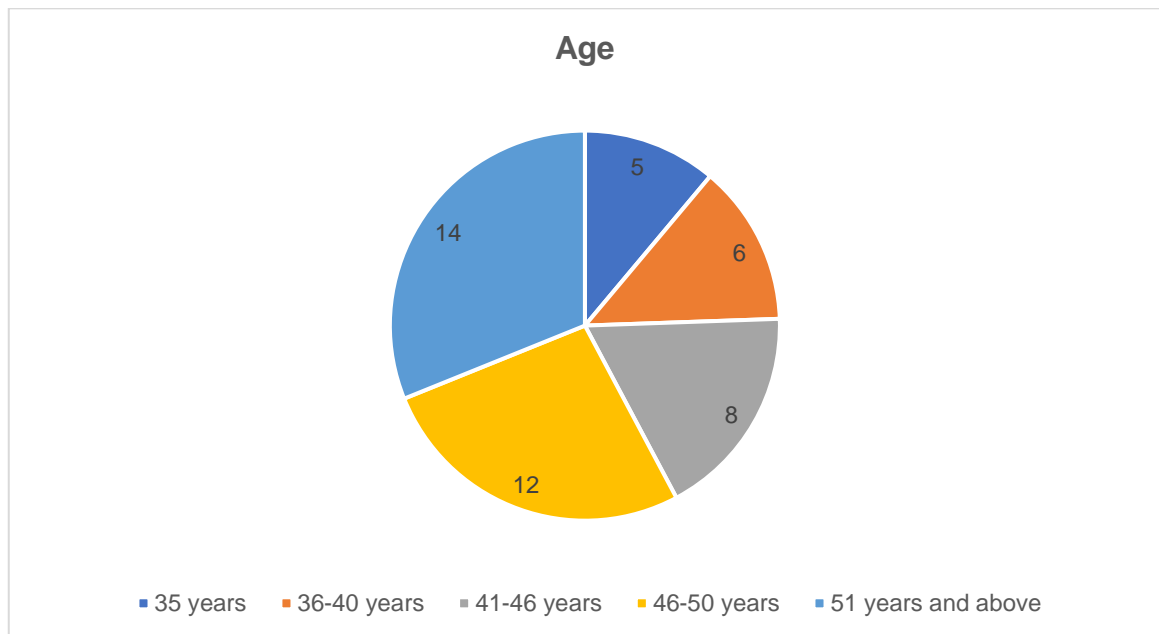


Figure 5.2: Pie chart graph on age categories of participants

From Figure 5.2, there are age category records given by participants as follows: five were 35 years of age, six were between 36-40 years of age, eight were between 41-46 years of age, 12 were between 46-50 years age and 14 were between 51 years and above in terms of age. The less number recorded on participants of 35 years age at management could be because of few of them with the required knowledge and skills to be promoted to the management level since few of them have the required knowledge and skills. The noted participants

of ages between 36-40 years was promoted because they have qualifications, relevant knowledge and of work experience.

The better increased number of recorded participants of ages 41-46 years could be because of promotional opportunity came their way as they have required experience and been in the metro police system for more than 15 years. The significant improved number of participants from ages between 46-51 years recorded was because these members were part of old municipal authorities where they were in the supervisory level at the time of establishment of the metro police in the early 2000 and have also acquired relevant qualifications and experience. The dominant 14 noted participants of ages between 51 years and above was because they were in the management level on their previous district municipalities, having management experience, relevant qualifications and being part of former top security or traffic officers.

5.2.3 Race presentation

Figure 5.3: Presentation of race categories of participants

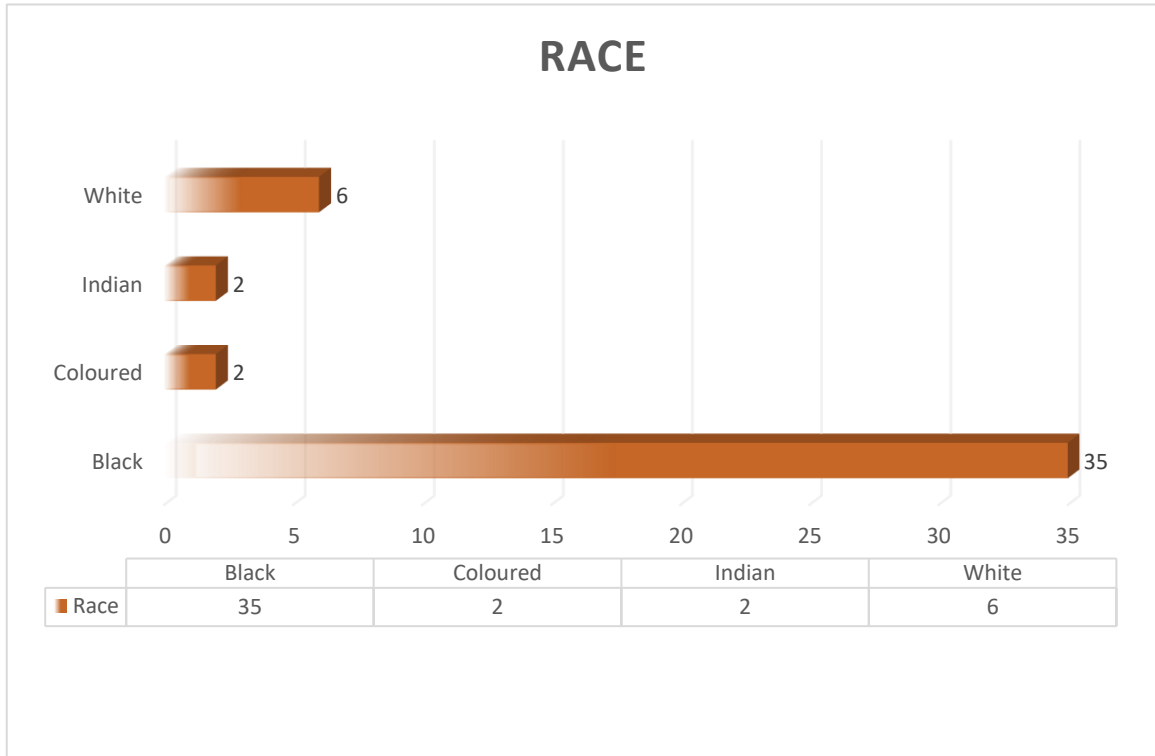


Figure 5.3: Bar chart graph on race categories of participants

Figure 5.3 depicts the race category information provided by the participants: six were white, two were Indian, two were coloured, and 35 were black. Insufficient number of white members could be because of lack of relevant abilities and job experience needed for promotion to the management level from the small number from white population in the metros. A Small number of Indians participated might also be because of fewer of them in the metro police database and those in the system do not have related qualifications and capacity to be promoted to the management level.

It could be that few coloured participants are also because of small number of them been recruited and promoted in the management level due to required qualifications and experience. Majority of blacks in the managerial level could be perpetuated by the fact that more blacks were recruited in the metro policing

system and are having required skills and experience to be promoted in terms of equity plan and affirmative action. The other indication of too many black participants in the study might be the intended revoking of previously white police recruitment strategies that disadvantaged qualified blacks for promotion and progressions. The other reason is that large number of promoted managers of the divisions are blacks.

The highest educational qualification on participants outlined in Figure 5.4:

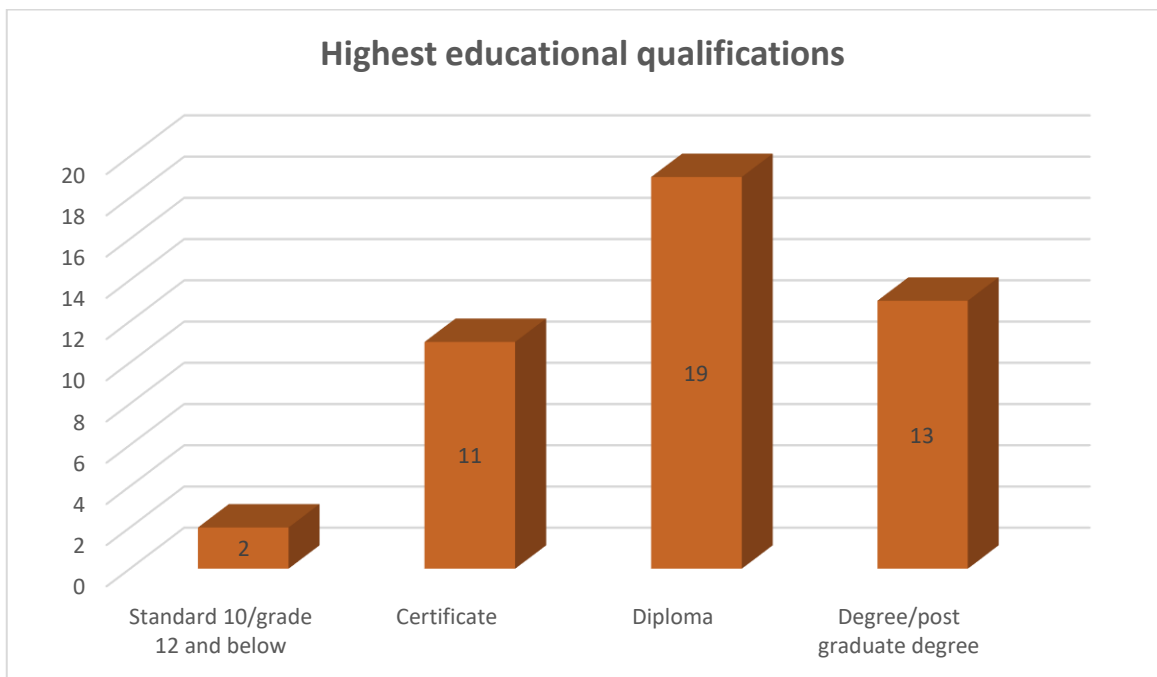


Figure 5.4: Bar chart graph of highest educational qualifications

Figure 5.4 depicts the highest educational qualifications given by the participants as follows: 2 completed standard 10/grade 12 and above, 11 completed certificates, 19 completed diploma and 13 completed degree/post graduate degree. Those few promoted with standard 10 or matric could be that they have relevant experience and are being absorbed into the metro police system for managerial promotion purposes.

Those participants with only one certificate was because the policing human resource policy and procedure allowed them to be promoted and put specific

timeframe to complete and submit diplomas as they usually do that with other positions. Those with diplomas was because they were promoted based on their condition of work requirements and they acquired relevant highest qualifications to be promoted to the management level posts. Those with degrees and postgraduate qualification they wanted to improve their educational qualities to stand a good chance to be promoted or considered for high post and beyond, as well as to be hired as they will be having highest qualifications.

5.3 OBSTACLES HAMPERING EFFECTIVE CRIME PREVENTION BY METRO POLICE SERVICE (MPS)

For the researcher to determine and understand the obstacles that are hampering metro police officers from preventing crime, combating and reducing, the levels of crime the following research objective and research question were asked respectfully:

Research objective 1: To outline the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng Province.

The next research question was sought to obtain and identifying participant's understanding on obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating and reduction.

Research question 1: What are the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by the metro police officers in Gauteng Province?

All 40 of the participants responded to the question. The following are the themes that came out of the responses from the participants:

Lack of resources: 43 of participants indicated lack of resources as obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating for the metro police officers. Participants further mentioned lack of adequate and specialised vehicles within the metro police division as the obstacles in preventing crime.

Participants further stated that lack of resources such as training, skills development and leadership is very prevalent in the MPS.

Participant 1 said: *“Insufficient and inadequate budget allocation to the metro police division is one of the obstacles. For metro police to control the crowd and deal with service delivery we require armoured vehicles, nyalas and protective clothing such as shields and bullet proof vests.”*

It is clear that tools of trade, as part of resources, remain key for metro police to fulfil their mandate. Of critical importance is the budget because if the budget is adequate, then the metro police could buy the required resources. The knowledge and the expertise to use the budget appropriately will always remain key though.

In addition to the resources that the MPS in a metropolitan city should have is that the employees need to execute their duties. This was clearly outlined by Participant 16 when saying that: *“There is a lack of proper uniform in the (MPS), firearms, ammunitions, protective clothing, batons, handcuffs and office furniture”*.

At times it is not about the unavailability of the resources; it may also be about lack of effectiveness and fitness for the available resources and their deployment thereof. The poor allocation of resources and bad deployment of members to the specialised units came out very clearly as an obstacle. Participants 10, 23, 27 and 34 indicated management on strategic planning and control as critical obstacles that hamper crime combating. From the above responses from participants, it is clear that metro police officers fail to reach their objectives because of poor management planning and control of resources. This lack of resources affects scorecards and performance of many officers in the MPS negatively.

It was highlighted by different researchers agreeing with statement mentioned by participants that lack of resources is an obstacle affecting crime prevention role of metro police division (Montesh, 2011:19). Both participants and researchers point out that the shortage of important resources such as police strategies, tactics, cars, gunshot shields, guns, and bullets affect their crime prevention intention. It is clear that either lack of resources or inadequate allocation of resources especially adequate budget to the MPS are negatively affecting their role in controlling and reducing crime in Gauteng Province.

Political interference, influence, and intervention: 14 of the participants mentioned political interference as an obstacle that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction, and combating for the metro police officers.

Participant 17 said that: *“Politicians take a decision on who must be appointed as chief of police and determining amount to be allocated to the metro police division. That is a problem”*. This may be attributed to some of problems these MPS face because when one political party loses power of the metro, the incoming political party deploys its own chief of police.

Linked to the responses about the appointment of chief of police, was the issue of other appointments relating to other senior personnel in metro police divisions as clearly articulated by Participants 33, 36 and 38 are with the view that mayors have a say in the appointment of metro police senior managers and this also presents its own challenge.

On the other hand, participant 43 shared information that: *“Comrades and party individuals are deployed within the structures of the municipal police to push for party political interests on sacrificing the will of the community”*.

According to participant 10 *“Politicians are not interested in supporting the metro departments with necessary resources in order to achieve their mandate. The politicians are only serving their political and own interests by instructing metro*

police to conduct static deployment at their offices and homes while community is left alone. The elected leaders are escorted with big German cars while officers on the ground chase hardcore criminals with Toyota Tazz cars while the criminals drive fast and expensive cars". These responses from the participants indicate that politicians run their 'own shows' in the MPS. It seems that politicians are interested in giving wrong directions in terms of police existence by not allocating needed resources and yet they expect the metro police to perform miracles to achieve their objectives.

Rowe (2020:17) agrees with ideas mentioned by participants above that party-political interference, influence and intervention are obstacles that affect their crime prevention objectives. They further state that after being voted for power thereafter being voted for power, politicians only focus on party political self-enrichment and improvement. The researcher also noted that partisan promotion on senior management levels is rife in the policing departments in South Africa, especially in the MPS.

Legislation restrictions on crime prevention role: Just over half 23 of the participants mentioned that legislative restrictions also play a crucial role in making it difficult for metro police to perform their tasks such as collecting evidence, investigating crime and conducting crime prevention training by metro police division.

Participants 9 and 23 mentioned lack of reaction to crime and proactive training by the metro police as an obstacle that hampers effective crime prevention. Conversely, participants 22 and 14 indicated that the restriction of not having powers to conduct and conclude crime prevention functions and responsibilities as an obstacle that hampers effective crime prevention.

According to participants 34 and 38, metro police could not be able to launch festive or Easter's operational plan before SAPS had launched their own. Both participants articulated that SAPS and national traffic authority must take-off their national operational plan first then metro police will be able to follow since metro police complement the police in crime reduction. It is clear that the metro police

have no power in terms of our Constitution and regulations to conduct crime prevention operations without getting signature from police minister.

The researcher noted that the respondents' previous points of legislative restriction on the crime prevention role of metro police was noted to be in agreement with Reisig and Kane (2014:14). These restrictions positioned metro police into a hand and second best to SAPS counterparts in crime prevention. The researcher agrees with the notion that to win the battle on ever increasing crime in Gauteng cities, it would be correct that metro police were given extra powers and functions to facilitate crime prevention training, strategies, and plans that would assist the community in controlling crime. This will be only possible unless some legal restrictions are eased and dropped to suit city police crime prevention systems.

Lack of investigation powers: The overwhelming majority 44 of participants indicated that lack of power to investigate cases as an obstacle that hampers effective crime prevention, reduction, and combating for the metro police officers. Participants further mentioned that after metro police had arrested criminals, they handed them over to the SAPS to investigate crimes committed.

According to participants 5, 12 and 14, the lack of investigation of cases by the metro police officers is counteracting their daily statistics on prosecution and sentencing part which deemed to be crime prevention deterrence factor. Participant 16 mentioned that: "*SAPS as legislated authority turned to ignore crucial evidence by either incompetency or corruption to allow the accused to walk free. SAPS lack the capacity in terms of expert investigators; this should allow metro police to take care of not serious cases*". Participants 28, 29, and 36 SAPS disregard marked and identified crime evidence documented by metro police as first respondents such as murder weapon found on a crime scene showed lack of policing skills.

Participants 31 and 41 indicated that lack of investigation power by the metro police is weakening the criminal justice system because metro officers are

situated at the corners of the community yards. It is clear from the participants who lack power in investigating crimes it affects their operational mandate in terms of how to profile criminals and understand crime patterns, crime hotspots, and crime statistics. This is also affecting metro police planning in dealing with crime reduction, combating, and prevention. The participants above agree with notion by Newham (2006:1) that lack of investigation powers on metro police is affecting their crime combating mission. Metro police need authority to investigate crime to clear outstanding cases within the SAPS. It is clear from these respondents and different authors that metro police are not allowed to collect, examine and interrogate suspected accused also preserve crime evidence which is a problem.

Lack of crime prevention training: 35 of participants mentioned lack of crime prevention training as an obstacle that hampers effective crime prevention, reduction, and combating for the metro police officers. In specifying some training specifics, participants 12, 16 and 21 indicated that lack of crowd control and se techniques training is primarily the obstacle to preventing crime. On the contrary, participants 4, 27 and 32 agreed that poor crime prevention teaching by unqualified instructors hampers effective crime combating objectives.

Participants 3, 8 and 9 mentioned that the only training provided the metro police are traffic management training and a little bit of by-laws training. They further indicated that they are registering with the traffic authority to be recognised as metro police officials. Of course, there are many benefits to being affiliated with the professional body of the related fields.

According to participants 31, 36 and 40, there are most critical crime prevention training lacking in the metro police units, such as defensive driving, crime reaction training, basic police training, crime detecting, and stop and search and crime combating training. It is very clear from the respondents that metro police at their police training colleges are not conducting any crime prevention training.

The findings presented in the preceding paragraphs indicated that metro police colleges and municipal police skills development institutions are not providing and teaching crime prevention training which supported by (Montesh, 2011).

Metro police learning centres could include crime prevention training such as crime profiling, statistics, profiling and investigation to help them deal with crime. That metro police academies are not teaching how to collect crime evidence, protect crime scenes, and profile suspected individuals. This failure by metro police to teach, enable, and present crime reduction courses to their officers is a clear indication that they are not responsible for dealing with third-degree crimes such as burglary, drug possession, and possession of illegal handguns.

Poor recruitment of new members: The overwhelming majority 43 of the participants cited poor recruitment of new members as contributing factor to hampering effective crime combating of metro police. Participants 6 and 21 lament that the councillors, ward committees and mayors infiltrate the recruitment system. Both mentioned that they are hiring and unappointing of chief of police and other senior members as they wish.

These participants further indicated that the selection and recruitment of new recruits is open for manipulation since is not determined by the higher degree, diploma qualification from recognised higher learning institutions.

Promotion and recruitment are not professionalised: in the metro police system to acquire necessary and capable individuals to deal with crime. Participant 4 and 19 indicated the lack of skilled officers in crime prevention. The participants both mentioned that metro police members need to learn new techniques and tactics on crime reduction. It is worth noting that the police recruitment and promotion criteria should be reviewed, and the system set in a manner they will become difficult to crack.

The participants agree with the views of Chambliss and Hass (2012:7) that only party-political recruitments, selections and promotions on officers in the policing field are being advanced. It is clear indication that service delivery is seriously compromised in government by elected politicians as they continue wreaking havoc in the policing human resources and administrations. Participants also noted that the poor selection and recruitment of metro police members is bringing

incompetent individuals into the police system who are not committed to serving the interest of the people but their own.

Duplication of functions: Participant number 2 mentioned that "*Duplication of functions as an obstacle within the metro police division that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating*".

For example: Participant 14 mentioned that "*When metro police respond to accidents complain they find SAPS on the scene*". The participants agree with Montesh (2011:19) that the MPS and SAPS are duplicating on functions and responsibilities. That usually happened where MPS and SAPS are simultaneously attending on the same motor vehicle accident which is not serious. They arrive after one another on the same scene of accident, while there is another serious complain of business robbery which is not being attended to.

Furthermore, they indicated that they work together in dealing with crime response and crowd control. The researcher is of the view that yes, different law enforcement authorities work collectively to achieve similar crime combating objectives and should complement and not compete with each other.

Poor top managers who lack strategic planning and management of crime: Participants 7 and 13 mentioned poor top management as obstacles within the metro police division that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating. Participant 10 also said: "*Poor senior management is an obstacle hampering crime prevention role of metro police*". This was also supported by participants 30 and 40 who mentioned that metro police are hiring clueless top managers to lead their department without strategic thinking knowledge.

Participant 8 mentioned that "*Lack of strategic planning and management is an obstacle within the metro police division that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating*". This was also supported by participant 25, 36 and 42 who agreed that poorly qualified managers in the metro police are an obstacle

that hampers crime prevention. It was clear from the participants that poor management who lack capacity to strategize in crime prevention is an obstacle.

The above participants agree with the same idea that poor managers are promoted to strategic positions to deal with crime-related issues even though they lack policing knowledge (Rowe, 2020:17). It is clear that the war or battle to contain crime in the MPS is far from over until qualified police executives, seniors and middle managers are deployed in policing structures.

Different shift work systems worked by SAPS and metro police: Participant 26 mentioned that: "*Different shift work systems worked by SAPS and metro police as obstacle that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating*". MPS are working 8 hour shifts while SAPS work 12 hour shifts this affect operational planning and implementation because MPS withdrew members in the middle of operation due to the fact that their working hours lapsed as signed in their collective agreements as outline in the Municipal Systems Act. These becomes barriers because SAPS have to work alone with limited resources since MPS are knocking off. On the other hand, Participant 20 indicated that: "*We work eight hours shift that is not corresponding to the other law enforcement agencies within the area*". At times this causes the metro police officers to sacrifice. This was clearly captured by Participant 30 who stated that: "*Metro police most of the time they depend on overtime to continue with their crime prevention operations*".

In contrast, Participant 16 stated that: "*Metro officers are withdrawn on joint operations due to time exceeding their eight (8) hours shift to knock off duty*". Participant 16 further indicated that "*SAPS had to continue alone because they are working twelve hours (12) shifts*". From the participants' views, it is clear that metro police are unable to continue with their workload because of shift hours worked per day and night. This somehow brings a possible delay in dealing with matters that both metro police and SAPS could be working on.

The participants indicated that different working shifts by SAPS and metro police were an obstacle hampering their quest to deal with crime. Other Participants are

not worried more about police working different shifts systems. They are more concerned about working bond between law enforcement officers. It is clear that most critical part included was to ensure that police officers reported on duty must bring crime to halt.

Lack of proper cooperation by SAPS: Participant 24 indicated that: *"Lack of proper cooperation by SAPS is an obstacle that hampers effective crime prevention, reduction and combating"*. This was supported by participants 37 and 38. Participant 22 stated that: *"SAPS are of the view that metro police are reporting to them hence they are providing supporting role to SAPS in crime prevention"*.

On the other hand, Participant 29 stated that: *"SAPS are jealous of the metro police because they are better paid than them"*. These accounts shared information from participants that indicated that there is still more work to be done in forging relationship between metros and SAPS.

The mentioned above coincide with Mashego, (2020:13), that lack of proper cooperation by SAPS is an obstacle to the crime prevention role. This was evident when sometime of metro police's officer withdrew their resources such as vehicles especially where different political parties are governing at municipal level but not at national government level. This lack of cooperation is always endangering the life of the people because safety and security standards are compromised to the core.

Design of the cities: Participant 19 indicated that: *"The design and town planning of our cities in Gauteng are obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating The officers from other area cannot work together with others because the design of our cities had not taken crime prevention strategy into consideration"*. As a result of design of the cities, it has become difficult for MPS to assist one another due to lack of proper city planning looking in to CPTED theory. Safety and security intentions of the MPS in Gauteng Province is affected negatively.

This notion was highlighted in disagreement by the Municipal Systems Act No.32 of 2000 that each municipality established under this Act must govern their own jurisdiction with passed by-laws. It was also noted by the researcher that police officers are allowed in terms of regulations to further discharge their functions and powers as long as they are within the perimeter of the law.

Corruption: Participant 1 indicated that: *“The leak of operational covert information to the criminals by metro police members is a legal shortcoming for metro police officers in preventing, combating, and reducing crime in South Africa”*. On the other hand, Participant 39 stated that: *“Corrupt relationship between the metro police officers and syndicates is defeating the whole intention of crime prevention”*.

According to Participant 31 and 33, most recruits are family members of the executives, senior managers within the municipality and party politics comrades. The participants agreed with the Arain (2014:95) that leaking of information due to corrupt officers is shortcoming that hamper effective crime prevention role for metro police divisions. The corrupt officers on duty hinder effective crime prevention by pricing police plans and schedules to the criminals. It is clear that these corrupt activities by officers seriously impacting on service delivery mission which is supposed to be performed by metro police. Participant 13 mentioned corruption as an obstacle that humpers crime prevention, reduction and combating. Both participants stated that corruption such as bribery, extortion of money and colluding with hardcore criminals by the metro police officials is an obstacle to crime prevention because it takes out opportunity credibility and integrity of the MPS. It is also tarnishing the name of MPS that which ordinary citizens depend on in reporting and preventing crime.

The consequences were very clearly outlined by Participants 1, 7 and 13, mentioning that metro police and SAPS are being arrested while planning for crime or on crime heist scenes within our country. From the participants, it looks like it is a norm for metro police officials to commit corruption crime. Participants agree that corruption through employment of cronies and friends is rife in the metro

police division (Arain, 2014:95). Top police appoint their own comrades to the senior positions of the departments.

It is clear that corruption is a serious pandemic within the government system that the executives and politicians perpetuate. The researcher agrees with the statements mentioned that mainly party-political affiliates are promoted to senior positions in the metro police departments as outlined by (Chambliss & Hass, 2012:7).

5.4 LEGAL SHORTCOMINGS HAMPERING METRO POLICE CRIME PREVENTION

For the researcher to confirm and identify the legal shortcomings that hamper crime prevention, combating and reduction for MPS the following research objective and research question were outlined and asked respectfully:

Research objective 2: To determine the legal shortcomings relating to MPS in combating and preventing crime.

The following research question sought to get the participant's finding on legal shortcomings that hamper metro police in preventing crime. The following research question was asked and it was aimed at achieving the above objective.

Research question 2: What are the legal shortcomings for the metro police officers in preventing, combating, and reducing crime in South Africa?

Lack of investigation powers: The overwhelming majority 41 of the participants mentioned lack of investigation of crime as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa.

Participants 8,16 and 40 mentioned lack of interviewing and interrogating suspected accused by the metro police officers as the legal shortcomings in crime combating, reduction and prevention. Participant 3 mentioned that: "*Metro police are prohibited to collect evidence in a crime scene, they must wait for SAPS to arrive in order to take over the investigation of cases*". On the other

hand, Participant 11 stated that: *“Metro police are restricted to even question, collect and obtain evidence which involved accused on the crime scene”*.

According to participants 24, 32 and 44, metro police are overlooking evidence in possession of criminals because they feel like they do not have powers to involve themselves in interrogating the suspects. Furthermore, participants 28 and 37 indicated that metro police cannot even investigate accidents that are involving their officers. The arguments stated by participants above agree with Newham (2006:1) that lack of investigation powers by metro police is hampering their crime reduction aim because they are dealing with motor vehicle accidents but cannot investigate the cause of the accident to curb them in future. Failure to not investigate the cause of accidents result in not able to provide the curbing future solution to reduce number of accidents. Participants stated that metro police lack authority to investigate criminal activity in terms of the rule of the law. It is clear that this lack of crime evidence collection and examination by metro police is hampering their quest to prevent motor vehicle accidents and stealing in the cities.

Lack of power to have municipal police holding cells: About 28 of the participants mentioned lack of ability to have municipal police holding cells as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating, and reducing crime in South Africa. Participants 21 and 12 indicated that metro police are legally restricted to build their own holding cells. In contrast, participants 12, 21 and 23 indicated that after metro police arrested suspected criminals, they have to book them at nearest police station. These participants (12, 21, and 23) further stated that municipalities are restricted to establishing buildings to hold crime suspects. Remember that suspects are part of collected suspected criminal evidence which needed to be presented in court of law; so, metro police will be able to present their own arrested suspect than depending on SAPS.

These findings resonate with notion by Archbold (2020:4) that lack of power to have municipal police holding cells are shortcomings hampering crime prevention

role. Participants stated that if metro police were given authority to store evidence on their own properties will provide authentic and trustworthy exhibits in court of law. It is clear from the participants that metro police lack power to collect crime evidence and have storage sets that will help them preserve crime evidence, which hamper their crime control intention.

Lack of authority to preserve and store evidence: About 31 of the participants mentioned lack of authority to preserve and store evidence as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. Participants 20 and 38 mentioned that metro police are restricted to preserve, and store evidence found in possession of searched suspects after arrests. Participants 14 and 21 articulated the same perception that they used a weapon or an instrument to commit crime are handed to police because metro police is restricted to store evidence in terms of the SAPS Act and Constitution.

Participant 16 stated that: "*Metro police are presenting cases in court of law as witnesses while SAPS are investigating officers and therefore SAPS preserve evidence*". On the other hand, participants 11 and 31 felt demoralised by lack of power to hold on evidence on their prescribed premises until presented to the court of law by them. It is worth mentioning that metro police felt deprived on lack of power to preserve and store evidence. The participants agree with noted notion by Mokoena (2007:142) that lack of power to preserve and store evidence is a shortcoming that hampers crime prevention role of metro police. Lack of storing evidence by metro police is always resulting in withdrawals of cases owing to lack of concrete evidence as presented by SAPS. On the other hand, MPS argued that with the SAPS in charge of evidence you find more detailing documents as part of evidence missing during court appearance. It is clear that metro police's lack of authority to keep evidence on their own properties is affecting safety and security quest in a negative way as cases are dropped owing to illegal arrest.

Lack of power to present crime prevention training in metro police academy: The overwhelming majority 41 of the participants mentioned lack of

power to present crime prevention training in the metro police academy as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa.

Participants 12, 16 and 21 indicated that lack of power to conduct crowd control, crime prevention and defence techniques training is a legal shortcoming in preventing, combating and reducing crime. In contrast, participants 22 and 40 indicated that metro police's lack of authority to teach about crime prevention models and systems as legal shortcomings in preventing crime. On the other hand, participants 12, 23 and 34 mentioned that lack of power to conduct crime investigation, crime profiling and patterns training is affecting their crime prevention role negatively. They further indicated that they are not allowed to be trained on crime evidence collection, intelligence, reaction and combating.

Participants 37, 35 and 41 indicated that metro police lack authority to teach search and seizure in the buildings, crime reaction technique, basic police training, crime detecting training, and hardcore crime combating training. From the participants, it is clear that metro police lack power to teach and educate their members on crime reduction, combating and prevention. The participants above agree with Mokoena (2007:142) that lack of power to present crime prevention training in metro police is hampering their effective crime prevention intention. Furthermore, Mokoena (2007) indicates that this failure by metro police to successfully deal with crime is owing to lack of crime prevention knowledge and skills.

Lack of power to defy political influence and interference: Participant 9 mentioned that: *“There is lack of power to defy political influence as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa”*. Similarly, participant 15 indicated that: *“Political interference in metro policing operations and administration is the order of the day, especially in the municipalities”*. On the other hand, participant 17 agreed with participant 9 and participant 15 by outlining that defiance rule on politicians

will assist metro police management to manage without fear and favour, if they had powers enabling them to defy politicians.

Participants 12 and 32 mentioned that lack of authority to defy politicians on decisions taken on appointments of strategic level of metro police structure. Participants 15 and 26 stated that executive mayors instruct chief of police on work programme. Participant 31 shared information that: *“Comrades and political party card carrying members are deployed within the metro police divisions to pursue political agenda”*. These responses clearly indicate that politicians are pushing in the metro policing section so that they account to their political parties because there is a lack of power system within the council to defy political influence and interference.

The participants above agree with Beek, Gopfert and Steinberg (2017:12) that lack of powers to defy political influence and interference is a shortcoming that is negatively affecting crime prevention role of metro police. It was also noted by the researcher that political influence and interference is part and parcel of day-to-day policing operations in the metros which is destabilising the force to achieve their mission.

Lack of legal division within metro police directorate: Participants 10 and 18 mentioned lack of legal division within metro police directorate as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. Participants 18, on the other hand went on to state that: *“Legal division will assist metro police officers in provision and interpretation of police regulations and other legal aspects such as how to collect evidence, how to protect crime scene and how to write statement”*. On the other hand, participant 22 stated that: *“Legal division will assist in advocating and guiding the officers on how to apply the rule of law”*. Similarly, participant 30 mentioned that: *“Legal unit will help in the interpretation of law and deal with cases forming civil and criminal lawsuits against the officers”*.

The findings resonate with arguments by Frankel (2013:5) that lack of crime prevention resources such as legal division within the metro police are obstacles that are affecting their crime prevention objectives. Reason is that metro police training is not giving enough crime prevention models and systems that advance rule of the law.

Participants agree that lack of legal division in the metro police is shortcoming that hamper effective crime prevention role of metro police (Newham, Masuku & Dlamini 2006:16). The legal divisions could be teaching and advocating crime prevention principles, laws, policies and interpretation of statute by legally capable metro police members.

Reviewing of Criminal Procedure Act (CPA) No. 51 of 1977: Participant 26 mentioned that: *“CPA needs to be reviewed as it stands now as legal shortcoming for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa”*. Participants 24 and 30 supported this view when asserting that the Criminal Procedure Act does no longer have legitimacy and relevancy into today’s criminal justice spectrum. Participant 37 agreed with assertions of participant 24 and 30 by mentioning that Criminal Procedure Act should be reviewed to be in line with the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa.

These participants agree that lack of reviewing Criminal Procedure Act is a shortcoming that hamper effective crime prevention (Madihlaba, 2018). Failure to amend Criminal Procedure Act so that it is in line with the prescripts of Constitution of the Republic of South Africa is justice delayed. It is clear that this Act is old and depriving citizens of the country to be served according to the constitutional principles.

Power to combat, reduce and prevent crime: About 39 of the participants mentioned that the power to combat, reduce and prevent crime lies with the SAPS which has legal shortcomings for the metro police in preventing, combating and reducing crime. Participant 10 clearly stated that: *“Metro police are only*

supporting the SAPS in crime prevention". Participant 32 also backs this notion by mentioning that: *"Metro police complement the SAPS in a joint police operation"*. Similarly, participant 30 indicated that: *"Metro police function in crime reduction is to back the SAPS by providing resources such as vehicles and manpower"*.

Above-mentioned participants agree with SAPS Act, that powers to combat, reduce and prevent crime is solemnly responsibility of SAPS. The researcher argues that failure to allow metro police to conduct this crime prevention training is a clear crime combating let down. The metro police department is only permitted in terms of their appointment instruction to support SAPS in crime prevention which is shortcomings hampering because without SAPS MPS can't setup crime prevention operations to clean criminals in a particular identified area.

Limitation and restriction on municipal boundaries and jurisdictions:

Participants 4 and 9 mentioned restriction of municipal demarcated boundaries as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. Participant 29 stated that: *"It is difficult for metro police to conduct crime prevention operations beyond your municipal boarder as legal shortcomings because some of our officers are staying in other municipalities using their work vehicles but they can't deal with law breakers on their way to and from work due to municipal border limitations"*.

Participant 42 supported the above statements by saying that: *"Officers are not able to attend accidents while driving their work vehicles in the other municipal borders unless there are memorandums of understanding between the municipalities"*. Participant 43 indicated the same sentiments 43 as follows: *"You will only work in another municipality only if you are chasing a person who committed offence in your border in pursuit to effect arrest as outlined by Criminal Procedure Act No 51 of 1977"*.

Participants agreed with the notions Newham (2006:1) that limitation and restriction on municipal boundaries and jurisdictions are shortcomings that hamper effective crime prevention for metro police. This limitation is restricting metro police to fully perform crime reduction and prevention mandate as per their appointment.

Chief of police reporting to the executive mayor and city manager: Participant 10 mentioned that: *“Reporting of the metro police to the mayor and municipal manager is a legal shortcoming for metro police officers in preventing combating and reducing crime in South Africa because there are people who pursue political interests with police resources”*. While participants 23, 27 and 39 indicated that: *“Chief of police metro need to be appointed independently by police minister not by the mayors and city managers”*. Participants 17, 26 and 45 mentioned that most Chief of Police they do not have relevant qualifications, but they are still appointed for the position.

The participants agreed with the findings written by Rauch et al. (2001) that chief of police reporting to executive mayor and city manager is a shortcoming that hamper effective crime prevention. Further indicated that appointed chief of police is always aligned with the political parties even when they fail to deliver safety and security mission to the defend the community; they will not dismiss them. This line of reporting by the city police to the administrator is seriously impacting as a shortcoming to the policing management (Mokoena, 2007:8).

Metro police organisational structure: Participant 5 mentioned that: *“The setting up of metro police organisational structure as per the SAPS Act it places the metro under the pocket of the national police in terms of legal legitimacy and work direction as legal shortcomings for metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa”*. Similarly, participant 22 stated that: *“Metro police structure is a copy and paste from the SAPS structure without necessary resources to the metros”*. Participant 32 mentioned that: *“The metro police structure has no significant meaning in preventing crime at local level, since they are supporting the SAPS”*.

The participants agreed with Rauch et al. (2001) that metro police organisational structure is a shortcoming that hamper effective crime prevention role. The metro police organisational structure is a replica of the SAPS operational structure which is not giving secondary options to the society in terms of police operational substance on crime controlling effort.

5.5 DIFFERENT FUNCTIONS BEING PERFORMED BY MPS THAT COULD BE EFFECTIVE IN PREVENTING CRIME IN GAUTENG

Research objective 3: To investigate different functions being performed by MPS that could be effective in preventing crime in Gauteng.

The next research question sought to elicit the participant's views on the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police officers in crime prevention. The following research question was asked and it was aimed at achieving the above objective:

Research question 3: What are the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police officers in crime prevention?

Road policing: About 40 of the participants mentioned the role and functions of metro police as road traffic control and by-law enforcement in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. Participant 2 mentioned that: *"Stopping and issuing of traffic fines, attending accidents, stop and search to the motorists who are not complying with the National Road Traffic Act (NRTA) as the functions of metro police"*. Participant 33 concurred with Participant 2 that the duties of metro police is to arrest law breakers and conduct visible policing to prevent reckless driving and potential accidents. On the other hand, participants 11 and 43 stated that among functions of the metro police is to conclude roadblocks, checking traffic fines, attending accidents and roadworthy and

suitability of the vehicles and drivers respectfully. Participant 17 outlined that: *“Metro police support SAPS in crime combating”*.

These findings resonate with notion that road policing is number one function of metro police officers (Van Biljon, 2014:15). The reason is that most participants are traffic officers who are issuing traffic fines and notices on a daily basis on motorists who do not comply with traffic signs and regulations. They are further monitoring driver's behaviour and controlling congested traffic roads. The other reason is that they were taught at their traffic academy traffic signs and regulations.

By-law enforcement: The overwhelming majority 41 of the participants mentioned road traffic control and by-law enforcement as their legally supported functions and responsibilities vested on metro police in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. Participant 8 mentioned that: *“The metro police inspect hawkers for trade permits and remove illegal advertisement posts on the streets”*. On the contrary, participant 7 indicated that: *“Metro police inspect and confiscate non-complying traders operating in the city”*. Similarly, participants 12 and 13 mentioned that metro police deal with inspecting businesses that sell goods within the streets to check compliance with city's statute. On the other hand, participant 31 mentioned that: *“Metro police developed by-laws strategies that talks to creation of free market for traders to reduce ever increasing hawkers selling on the street”*.

Participants agree that by-law enforcement is number two function after traffic poling in the metro policing role (Rauch et al. 2001:18). The reason is that participants and writers are performing and researching on this by-law enforcement concepts on daily basis; hence, they agree on the context. It is clear from the discussion above that by-law enforcement is the second function of metro police after road policing.

Crime prevention role: 35 of the participants indicated crime prevention as a role and responsibility of SAPS. Participant 8 mentioned that: *“Metro police*

support SAPS during crime prevention by conducting search and stops, attending crime incidents and complains.” On the other hand, Participant 28 stated that: *“Metro police accompanied SAPS in joint crime prevention operations”*. Participants 13, 23 and 34 mentioned the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police in preventing, combating, and reducing crime in South Africa as visibly patrolling the streets of the city. Participants 22 and 9 supported this argument who mentioned that metro police conduct joint police operations with SAPS to deal with crime. In contrast, Participants 9, 10 and 32 indicated that metro police are only playing secondary role to the SAPS in crime prevention by giving extra resources to the police operations. On the contrary, Participant 27 mentioned that: *“Metro police complement SAPS by ensuring that the arrested criminals are booked in SAPS holding cells”*.

Participants agree with Madihlaba (2018:83) that metro police partly perform crime prevention functions by supporting the SAPS. The searching of accused persons in the city streets, arresting of criminals and booking of suspected crime evidence in the SAPS storage facilities is the role of SAPS as stated in the SAPS Act. It is clear that metro police officers are only dealing with crime prevention responsibilities to support the national police service; hence, this function belongs to SAPS.

Protecting municipal buildings, assets, and infrastructure: Participants 8 and 14 reported that metro police protect and safeguard municipal assets and buildings as part of the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police in preventing, combating, and reducing crime in South Africa (Madihlaba, 2018). Participant 10 supported this statement who stated that: *“We patrol perimeter fencing, conduct access control and deploy static guarding on municipal infrastructure to prevent cable and assets theft as part of our crime prevention functions and responsibilities”*.

Participants agree that metro police officers are bound by their appointment to protect and secure municipal assets and infrastructure against theft, vandalising and other crime risks while on duty (Memmes & Rauch, 2000).

The reason is that participants are working and also deploying officers to work on static duties at critical municipal buildings. The other reason is that metro police officers are known to be concluding security risk analysis to identify security weaknesses and provide security recommendations on which suitable security measures are deployed.

CPTED: Participant 4 mentioned that: *“Metro police advises the city in designing the locations and urban areas to suit CPTED strategy as piece of function in preventing, combating, and reducing crime in South Africa”*. In addition, Participant 19 supports this sentiment as follows: *“Municipality cut big trees and long grasses that which criminals use to commit crimes”*.

Participants agree that CPTED is the functions played by metro police officers as outlined in the IDP of the city (Burger, 2006:142). The reason is that metro police officers are the ones administratively guiding municipal planners, developers and architects to look into change environmental design when deciding on new settlements and business development.

Social crime prevention role: Participant 4 mentioned that: *“Metro police conduct drug awareness at school to educate small kids on the danger of drugs”*. On the contrary, Participant 29 indicated that: *“Metro police perform roadshows awareness on the malls and shopping complexes on violence against woman and children and domestic violence”*. This argument was supported by participant 6 by stating that: *“Among the functions of metro police is to teach young children about the consequences of crime and drugs”*. On the other hand, Participant 12 indicated that: *“Metro police educate our children on how to identify drugs and who to report it to in the early childhood stage”*. Similarly, participant 44 agreed that: *“Metro police deal with domestic violence stories through employing social crime prevention awareness at primary and secondary schools”*.

Participants agree with Felson and Boba (2010:200) that social crime prevention obstacle which are hindering crime prevention responsibility of the metro police. The reason is that MPS had established social crime prevention units that are guiding young children and students at schools about the danger of drugs and danger of crime in society, but they are getting guidelines from SAPS in terms of the SAPS Act.

Land invasion role: Nearly half 22 of the participants mentioned that perform land invasion duties as crime prevention functions. Participants 11 and 3 mentioned that metro police are evicting unlawful land invaders on the city assets as part of the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. Participants 25,29 and 36 also indicated this view that metro police are demolishing constructed plastic houses that was built without permission from municipality sites or the places within the jurisdiction of the municipality. Similarly, participant 30 mentioned that: *“Metro police escort contracted city’s security to demolish illegal and unlawful occupation of land on municipal terrain”*.

Participants agree that land invasion function is the role metro police officers as denoted by (Madihlaba, 2018). Metro police are required in terms of the by-laws and other municipal ordinances to protect city assets which includes land and city buildings. This play a critical crime prevention objective because there are police visibilities guarding critical municipal infrastructures and it resonate clear with the objective of the study.

Dealing with service delivery and workers protests: Over a third 15 of the participants indicated that metro police stop, deflect and control crowd during union and service delivery protests as part of the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police in preventing, combating. Participants 16 and 32 mentioned that metro police deal with violent picketers and demonstrators that are blocking municipal roads and streets. Furthermore, participants 8, 22 and 28 mentioned that metro police are protecting municipal offices during

demonstrations and march action. Participant 23 agreed with participant 15 that metro police is managing mob during demonstrations.

Participants agree that metro police are duty bound to deal with service delivery and workers protests (Felson & Boba, 2010:200). Metro police are required in terms of the by-laws and other municipal ordinances to protect city assets which include assisting SAPS in managing strikes and protesters at the city properties. Metro police are also required to close identified routes and streets where protestors are going to use to handover memorandum.

Dealing with illegal electricity connection and cable thefts: Participants 7, 8 and 16 mentioned that metro police deal with illegal connection of electricity and water on day-to-day basis. Similarly, participant 39 indicated that: “*Metro police deal with cable thefts within the municipal infrastructural network*”.

Participants agree that metro police are obligated to deal with illegal electricity connection and cable thefts (Mokoena, 2007:143). Metro police are required in terms of the by-laws, council resolutions and other municipal ordinances to protect city’s assets which includes protecting cables. Metro police have already indicated that they are having cable theft units that are mainly responsible for illegal cable thefts and connections around the city.

Dealing with illegal mining: Ten participants indicated that metro police deal with illegal mining as part of the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police in preventing, combating and reducing crime. According to Participants 20 and 26, metro police are involved in joint searching and arresting of illegal miners within the city. These miners are caught while digging copper, diamond and gold without permission from the abandoned mines within the jurisdiction of the municipality.

Participants agree that metro police are required in terms of their function to deal with illegal mining (Reisig & Kane, 2014:14). Madihlaba (2018:17) mentions that metro police are mandated in terms of the by-laws and other municipal ordinances to protect city assets which include managing illegal mining as it is

the municipal asset. Reason is that metro police had stated that they established illegal mining units that are on daily basis dealing with illegal miners.

5.6 POWERS AND RESPONSIBILITIES REQUIRED BY METRO POLICE OFFICERS TO BE EFFECTIVE IN CRIME COMBATING

Research objective 4: To investigate powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in crime combating.

For the researcher to determine and understand the powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in crime prevention the following research objective above and the next research question was outlined and asked respectfully:

Research question 4: Do metro police officers in South Africa require special legal powers in combating crime?

The researcher asked the participants to freely give detailed answer on whether they require special powers to combat crime. They were allowed to offer explanations in their own time freely. The following were the open views of the participants with regards to the asked research question.

Extra power to combat crime: 17 mentioned that metro police have powers to combat crime as appointed in terms of SAPS Act. Participant 11 and 18 indicated that metro have powers in terms of the National Road Traffic Act, police regulations and crime strategies to combat crime. Participant 23 supported this sentiment that stated that: *“Metro police is appointed in terms of SAPS Act, so they are allowed to combat crime within the city but the only problem they are facing is lack of adequate budget”*. On the other hand, participant 19 stated that: *“Metro police have powers to combat crime, problem is that members are corrupt”*. On the other hand, participant 38 mentioned that: *“Metro police do not need extra powers; hence, more power comes with darkness and complacency”*.

Participants 11, 17 and 18 agree with Mkhabela (2007:8) that extra power to prevent crime by metro police is required to combat crime because MPS can only enforce bylaw operations not combating crime. These participants further stated that if metro police given authority to investigate crime, conduct crime prevention training and store evidence will assist in combating crime. To prevent crime does not end on effecting of arrest, it is continuing until relevant evidence is collected, fouling of intended crime commission owing to deployed intelligence agents, proven guilty in court of law and the sentencing of the suspect (Madihlaba, 2018). While on the other hand Participant 19 disagree with participants 11, 17 and 18 that MPS has powers to prevent crime in terms of Criminal Procedure Act (CPA) and SAPS Act. Participant 23 agrees with Rauch et al. (2001:19) that MPS need power to collect, examine and question suspected suspect in terms of their appointments.

It is clear that MPS need extra power to prevent, reduce and combat crime as 28 participants indicated the need to examine crime, conduct crime prevention training and operations.

Investigation of crime powers: About 43 of the participants indicated that metro police require power to investigate crime to be able to reduce, prevent and combat crime. Participant 1, 2 and 6 indicated that metro police lack power to collect, preserve and store evidence in their compounds. This argument supported by participants 14, 19 and 26 that metro police are not allowed to search for clues and answers after crime was committed within the community. According to participants 42, 44 and 41, metro police do not have authority in terms of the Constitution and SAPS Act to interview and question suspected accused. In addition, participants 36 and 12 indicated that the investigation of criminal elements lies with the SAPS nothing else.

These findings resonate with the objective arguments mentions by Montesh (2011:19) that investigation powers needed by metro police to combat. Participants stated that if metro police were given power to investigate crime, they will relief SAPS backlog cases. The investigation of cases by MPS will add

another investigating system in the municipal area where people will be able to have alternative justice structure. It is clear from the findings from participants that metro police are not allowed to gather, inspect and interview suspected respondent in terms of their employment powers.

Power to have holding cells: 35 of the participants indicated that metro police require powers to have holding cells to combat crime. Participants 6 and 10 stated that metro police officers felt that after arresting criminals they are either released based on lack of evidence or corruption in the police stations. Participants 3, 4 and 13 concur that after metro police apprehending suspect inside victim's yard in possession of television set stolen inside that house, SAPS cannot prove that the accused is the same person arrested for that crime.

The above participants agree with Maisela (2020:4) that metro police require power to have holding cells. Participants further stated that if metro police assume authority to have their own holding cells will be able to ensure that accused arrested are safeguarded in terms of prescribed laws rather than handing over to SAPS.

Power to preserve and store evidence: Over half 25 of the participants indicated that metro police require power to preserve and store evidence to combat crime. Marked murder weapons with accused bloodstains are not presented in court by the SAPS owing to lack of storages in the police stations stated by participants 31 and 23. Participant 16 outlined that: "*Metro police are not even allowed to collect, obtain, and gather evidence in crime scene whether own member or motor vehicles involved*", while participant 17 stated that: "*Metro police do not need extra powers to deal with crime prevention*".

Participant 17 disagree with this notion of MPS having authority to build their own holding cells. Participants concur with Maisela (2020:4) that MPS require power to preserve and store crime evidence. They mentioned that MPS is receiving litigations from arrested suspect who alleged to be assaulted after arrest and this is hindering effective crime prevention in the MPS. If MPS is allowed to host

arrested suspect in their own holding cells, they will avoid many lawsuits from the people arrested. It is clear from most participants above that metro police need to be allowed to assemble, study and preserve crime evidence collected than giving it to the SAPS for storage.

Power to conduct crime prevention training: About 37 of the participants indicated that metro police require powers to conclude crime prevention training to be able to combat crime. Participants 37 and 41 mentioned that metro police require power to have their own crime prevention teaching and learning programme. According to Participants 7, 11 and 22, metro police should acquire the same training the SAPS receives. These participants further mentioned that this will enable them to know each other and work together after graduations.

Participants 29 and 14 support this view that metro police require authority to conduct crime prevention training and education within the metro police academy. Similarly, participant 2 and 28 resolved that the same police training that complies with international police standards and requirements will encourage trust, no fear and faith to all policing divisions in the fight against crime.

These findings resonate with notions by Newham, Masuku and Dlamini (2006:16) that metro police require power to conduct crime prevention training. It is clear from the findings and different authors that metro police need to have the authority to conduct crime prevention training to enable members to understand crime prevention theories, systems and models.

Power to work beyond municipal borders: Participant 3 stated that: "*Metro police require power to work into another municipality to combat crime*". Similarly, participant 29 mentioned that: "*Most of the metro police are staying in another municipality but can't be able to deal with offenders*". Participant 42 mentioned that: "*When metro police are travelling to other municipality can't be able to observe the accident*". Participant 43 concurred with participant 29 that powers to work beyond their municipal jurisdiction will ensure that any metro police officer work anywhere when confronted by crime situation than calling local policing structures operating in the area.

These findings resonate with literature that metro police require power to work beyond municipal borders as per the SAPS Act as long as the commission of the offence was done in their municipal terrain. The rationale behind these findings is that members of the public when they see metro police vehicle or police vehicle they want to be helped irrespective of borders. The community comments to say they belong to another municipality that they cannot do anything in terms of crime control is a serious travesty of justice which need to be rectified by allowing over the border working relationship (Madihlaba, 2018).

Power to be independent in crime prevention: Participants 1 and 5 indicated that metro police require power to independently combat crime. Participant 44 mentioned this argument as follows: *“Metro police must be able to conduct their crime prevention tracing, collect crime information and execute arrests alone”*.

These findings resonate with literature that metro police require power to be independent in crime prevention (Montesh, 2011:19). The reason for agreement is that metro police members know that they are not taught how to prevent crime in their colleges, and it became difficult for them to instruct members on how to combat crime.

Power to establish legal advisory unit: Participants 10 mentioned that: *“Metro police require power to establish their own legal advisory unit to be able to interpret the laws of the department in combating and preventing crime”*. Participants 20 and 34 supported these views as follows: *“Metro police members need advisory sectional law experts to assist in applying regulations as stipulated in terms of prescripts”*. In the same vein, participants 27, 17 and 45 agreed that legal unit will assist members in advising how to approach and protect the crime scene and profiling of criminals.

These findings concur with literature by Madihlaba (2018:112) that metro police require power to establish advisory unit. The reason is that metro police members know that they are not allowed to establish crime combating unit as per their

appointments (Montesh, 2011:19). They are not taught in detail how to apply policing codes and conducts, law of evidence and principles of law which make it difficult for them to apply the rule of law.

5.7 LEVEL OF TRAINING APPROPRIATE FOR METRO POLICE OFFICERS IN PREVENTING CRIME

Research objective 5: To determine the level of training which is appropriate for metro police officers in preventing crime and to determine if the current level of training is adequate in equipping the metro police officers with the required knowledge for doing their jobs successfully.

The next research question was sought to get the participants' responses on level of training appropriate for metro police officers in crime prevention and whether the current level of training adequate in equipping the metro police officers with required for metro police. The following research question was asked and it was aimed at achieving the above objective:

Research question 5: What level of training is appropriate for metro police officers in preventing crime and is the current level of training adequate in equipping the metro police officers with required knowledge for doing their job successfully?

To understand and determine appropriate and adequate training required for metro police officers in this research, the researcher has divided this question into two. The following two extended aspects when asking participants were labelled:

- Level of training appropriate to metro police in crime prevention; and
- Current level of training adequate in equipping metro police with required knowledge to combat crime.

Level of training and standard appropriate: The overwhelming majority 42 of the participants mentioned that the level of training provided for metro police is

not appropriate. Furthermore, the participants mentioned that the current training is 18 months' period. Participants 6 and 9 mentioned that the metro police training does not comply with international police training standards. Conversely, Participants 18, 19 and 15 argued that three to five years' period of training is needed and adequate to combat crime. Participants 29, 30 and 39 supported this argument by stating that senior certificate and driver's license are the prerequisite to being admitted as a metro police officer.

These findings resonate with arguments by Brandi (2018:94) that the level of training and standard provided for MPS not appropriate. The reason is that metro police members felt like the training provided is not appropriate as it concentrates on road traffic management but excludes the crime prevention function.

Crime prevention training: The overwhelming majority 43 of the participants mentioned that crime prevention training such as crime profiling, crime reaction, basic policing, detective course and combat crime are not provided in the metro police training centres. Participants 29 and 23 indicated that in terms of the law, metro police cannot provide crime prevention training; hence, they resort on using SAPS and private security training facilities.

These findings resonate with literature by Van Biljon (2014:142) that the crime prevention training is not provided for the MPS. The reason is that metro police colleges and instructors are not teaching their members crime prevention training since is not their competency in terms of regulations.

Training provided by unqualified and inexperienced instructors: About 38 of the participants indicated that the teaching and education in their police academies is provided by inexperienced, unqualified instructors.

Participant 33 mentioned that: "*New metro police officers just recruited in the past year [they] remain in the college to educate old and coming members*". Conversely, participants 10, 11 and 12 felt that the instructors must have at least ten years of experience and three years' relevant tertiary qualification. These

findings resonate with literature that training provided by unqualified and inexperienced metro police instructors is not appropriate (Van Biljon, 2014:142). The reason is that metro police members who provide police training are not evaluated on established criteria with set standard qualifications before they are accepted to teach at police academies.

No training on investigation of crime: 37 participants indicated no training on investigation, gathering, obtaining, and collecting. While participants 25 and 19 indicated that lack of preserving of exhibits, profiling of criminals, deploying of informers and crime intelligence gathering training is not provided in the metro police colleges.

These findings resonate with literature by Beek, Gopfert and Steinberg (2017:12) that no investigation of crime provided by MPS. The reason is that metro police members are not obliged in terms of the SAPS Act and other regulated laws to provide crime prevention training such as investigation of crime, crime detectives course and task force training.

Basic police training: Over a quarter 12 of the participants reported that the basic police training provided is not of good quality. Participant 23 indicated that: *“The training is not good because we are recruiting members who do not have qualifications”*.

These findings resonate with notion that basic police training provided is not appropriate (Montesh, 2011:9). The reason is that police training provided at metro police is mainly traffic control related and not police training provided by inexperienced unqualified instructors that they know.

Old curriculum teaching: Over two-thirds 31 of the participants mentioned that curriculum of teaching and education is not relevant in terms of crime combating, reduction and prevention. Participants 12, 32 and 45 felt that the teaching curriculum is only focusing on road traffic cooperation standards, traffic regulations, signs, and motor vehicle licenses.

These findings resonate with literature that old curriculum teaching which is provided is not appropriate to the set police standard (Rauch et al. 2001:19). The reason is that they know that metro police are not having research and development section which must be conducting studies on police science and traffic management and also come up with research studies findings on best updated curriculum for metro police.

Poor standard of police training: Participants 32 and 45 mentioned that the standard of metro police training is distressfully disturbing and poor in terms of international police and security standards. Participant 44 supports the views of participant 32 and 45 by indicated that there is no smooth introduction and orientation of new recruits to the bigger metro police system. Participant 21 stated that: *“Metro police recruits are just being thrown into deep end to provide services to the community”*.

These findings resonate with literature by Rauch (2001:15), that poor standard of police training is provided. The reason is their experiences and understanding of the past years of attending classes at their colleges and also monitoring of their new recruit’s capabilities in applying theory to practical when they start working with them.

No training in advance technology devices: Participants 22 and 33 mentioned lack of training in advanced security technology training to hampered metro police officers to trace and validate the status of a vehicle on the road. Participant 32 stated that: *“This technology will be able to assist in validating motor vehicle status and whether it is stolen or not”*.

The findings concur with literature by Mokoena (2007:71) that no training is provided in advance technology devices. The reason is that metro police officers involved in the study have attended all training courses and they are aware that this kind of training is not provided in their police colleges.

Recruitment and selection criteria: Participant 2 mentioned that: “*Quality of recruits in the metros is not good*”. On the other hand, participant 5 indicated that: “*Politicians turned metro police as place of job employment*”. Participant 31 also stated that: “*Municipalities run metro police division as job feeding programme of the cities as councillors who are nominating their own family and comrades to be hired*”.

Participant 12 also stated that: “*Recruitment of metro police is not fine and it needs to be reviewed and aligned with the required police state of expectation*”. Participant 16 indicated that: “*The selection process is not up to required standard*”. In the same vein, participant 20 also mentioned that: “*The recruitment and selection of new police officers is revolving around relatives and families of existing members of the force is bad*”.

These findings concur with literature that recruitment and selection criteria provided is not appropriate (Rauch et al. 2001:19). The reason is that metro police officers recruited and selected are not meeting police standard in terms of discipline, passion and commitment to serve since they are relatives of politicians or executive officials who instructed them to be hired.

Standardised entry requirements: Participant 10 mentioned that: “*The entry level of metro police is not standardised to the policing required*”. Participant 6 mentioned that: “*It is matric certificate and driver’s license that are needed to be part of the task force*”. On the other hand, Participant 18 indicated that: “*The standard of training and learning in the metros is very low*”.

These findings concur with literature that standardised entry requirements is not up to standard and appropriate (Madihlaba, 2018). The reason is that metro police officers who participated in the study know the current required standard which is grade 12 and driver’s license. The other indication could be that the known international standard set for police training is a three-year diploma/degree in either police science, security related or law studies to be able to produce police individuals who are professionals and career oriented.

Current training adequate in equipping metro police: 34 of the participants mentioned that the current metro police training is not adequate because it is focused on traffic violations and management. Participants 14 and 19 indicated that no crime prevention training that focuses on crime deterrence, deflection and delaying is provided. Similarly, participants 18 and 39 mentioned that the crime prevention training such as crime defensive modes was not provided to the metro police. Participant 23 mentioned that: “*They use private security service providers to educate their officers on defensive tactics, dog handling and horse riding*”.

These findings concur with literature by Frankel (2013:5) that current training is not adequately equipping metro police with crime prevention knowledge. The reason is that metro police officers are not trained and skilled on crime prevention training at their police colleges since legally, they do not have the power to do so.

5.8 ADEQUATE RESOURCES AND SPECIALISED SERVICES IN THE METRO POLICE DEPARTMENTS THAT CAN ENABLE THEM TO COMBAT AND PREVENT CRIME IN SOUTH AFRICA

Research objective 6: To evaluate adequate resources and specialised services in the MPDs that can enable them to combat and prevent crime in South Africa.

The following research question was asked to achieve the preceding research objective:

Research question 6: Are there adequate resources and specialised services in the MPDs that can enable them to combat and prevent crime in South Africa?

This question was divided into two sub-questions to get clarity on resources adequacy and specialised services within the metro police sector:

- Are there adequate resources in the metro police?
- Are there specialised services in the metro police to help in crime prevention?

The participants were able to provide their answers concerning to the resources and specialised services since they are the top managers of their units. The researcher asked the participants to provide material evidence according to their thoughts and analysis.

Adequate resources: 43 of the participants from metro police mentioned that there are no adequate resources for metro police to help them to combat crime. Participants 3 and 13 indicated that the allocation and provision of right resources is lacking in the metro police division. These views supported by participant 21, 27 and 34 by indicating that less resource allocated are not optimally used by the department because of lack of management principles. Participant 29 indicated that: *“Resources are not adequately and equally allocated based on their workload to optimally satisfy the community needs”*. According to participants 41 and 44 there are other critical resources that are not adequately funded within the MPD that had collapsed.

These findings concur with literature by Mkhabela (2007:8) that there are no adequate resources in the metros. The reason is that metro police officers confirmed during the study that they are failing to attend complaints and incidents owing to lack of resources such as firearms and vehicles that are booked for repairs and funds. The other reason is the ever-increasing crime rate reported in police stations as outlined in the crime statistics and police statistics.

The following critical resources that make department to function were identified as most lacking in terms of priorities as outlined by the participants:

Vehicles: The overwhelming majority 43 of the participants mentioned that metro police have inadequate vehicles to enable them to combat and prevent crime in South Africa. Participants 40, 41 and 18 mentioned that metro police lack specialised vehicles to deal with demonstrators and hooliganisms in the city streets. In the same vein, participant 6 indicated that: *“Allocation of vehicles as resources is not measured in terms of workload”*.

These findings concur with literature by Shaw (2016:991) that there are no adequate vehicles. The reason is that metro police officers who are participants failed to dispatched officers to attend accidents and incidents involving community members owing to lack of vehicles.

Firearms and ammunition: About 33 of the participants mentioned lack of firearms and ammunition as preventing them to combatting and preventing crime. Participants 13 and 16 indicated that lack of ammunition in their area had resulted in metro police members possessing firearms without conducting compulsory year shooting exercises. Participants 7 and 8 shared the same sentiments that their workforce had to produce a paper as proof of firearm permit owing to lack of firearm card reading machine.

These findings concur with literature by Magome, (2015:1) that there are no adequate firearms and ammunition. The reason is that metro police officers involved in the study are seating with officers at their workstations without firearms owing to lack of budget which resulted into insufficient firearms and ammunitions.

Uniform: 27 of the participants mentioned lack of adequate uniform as a major setback to achieve their crime reduction, combating and prevention. These findings concur with literature by Mokoena, (2007:159) that there is no adequate uniform.

The reason is that metro police officers who participated in the study do not have uniform such as combat boots, trousers, protective cloth, bullet proof vests, firearms and jackets owing to insufficient allocated budget or clothing tender processes. Participants mentioned that their own members cannot go into the street without uniform. Lack of uniform in the MPS is an obstacle that hinders safety and security services because when MPS members are not in uniform, some community members think they are not real police officers.

Protective equipment: 15 participants mentioned lack of protective clothing such as shields and bullet proofs as resources that can enable them to combat and prevent crime.

These findings concur with literature that there is no adequate protective equipment (Mokoena, 2007:142). The reason is that when they conduct inspections on processions and parades, maybe they find metro police officers without bullet proof vests and protecting equipment.

Communication devices: 36 participants mentioned lack of communication mode such as a two-way radio, cell phones and other communication methods as a resource that enable them to combat and prevent crime.

The findings resonate with the literature that there are no adequate communications devices (Mokoena, 2007:143). The reason is that they cannot talk to each other while performing their duties due to lack of two-way radios. The other reason is that they experienced that officers while on duty they communicate using their personal cell phones via WhatsApp groups and messages discussing work related issues.

Tools of the trade: Only seven participants mentioned lack of handcuffs, cutting torch and baton stick (tonfa) as tools of trade that could enable them to deal with criminal elements.

These findings concur with the literature that there are no adequate tools of trade (Beek, et al., 2017:12). The reason is that metro police officers are unable to provide protection at the city's hijacked buildings, properties, infrastructures and vacant lands.

Workforce: About 18 of the participants mentioned a lack of adequate personnel in terms of members as a resource to combat crime.

These findings concur with literature by Newham (2006:1) that there is no adequate workforce. The reason is that metro police managers involved are unable to cover the huge city's area of concerned as identified as hotspots area and are prioritising in terms of daily patrols owing to lack of officers.

Adequate budget: Only ten of the participants mentioned poor allocation on budget to metro police as detrimental to combat crime. Participants 2 and 11 shared the same sentiments that the right allocation of money to the metro police will assist in buying needed resources to deal with combating, reducing and preventing crime.

These findings concur with the literature by Madihlaba (2018) that there is no adequate budget. The reason is that metro police get budget from the council submission and voting which is managed by politicians who are only concerned with party politics than voting for better police budget. If majority of political party members feel that budget is not necessary to be adjusted, they vote against it and as a result, other safety and security services are compromised.

Provision of training equipment and detection aids: Participants 40 and 45 indicated lack of job training as a critical defect that disable metro police to combat and prevent crime. Furthermore, Participants 11 and 30 supported the views by indicating that on the job training and skills development on speed and crime detection cameras could assist members in recognising what is expected from them in dealing with crime. In contrast, Participants 14 and 29 mentioned that metro police lack skilled members in police crime detection training as a resource to enable them to deal with crime.

These findings resonate with the literature. that the provision of training equipment and detection aids are not adequate (Lamb, 2018:939). The reason is that metro police officers involved know that such training is not provided since they nominate members to attend college training through signing and approvals of call ups.

Crime technological tracing devices: Participants 14 and 44 mentioned technology equipment such as deterrence cameras and alarm systems as lacking in the metro police to assist in crime prevention.

Participant 36 mentioned that metro police lack technological devices such as hand cameras and crime detecting cameras that can be used to check as to how many times did a vehicle stop during one day from province to another.

These findings concur with literature that there are no adequate crime technological tracing devices (Lamb, 2018). The reason is that metro police officers know that during operations they do not track and trace stolen vehicles, also fail to capture protesters during strikes on the road owing to lack of high-tech crime tracing devices.

Instructors: About 39 participants mentioned lack of good, qualified and experienced instructors as detrimental in achieving crime prevention objectives and goals by the MPS. Participants 22 and 33 mentioned that new recruits are employed after police graduations to be instructors without work experience because they know college managers. Participants 11, 14, 28, 32 and 37 indicated that instructors are recruited because they were SAPS members with only drivers' licence and matric. In contrast, Participants 14 and 26 mentioned that instructors are not trained psychological, teaching and learning, they just read manuals to the students

These findings of the participants concur with the literature that there are no adequate instructors (Madihlaba, 2018). This could be that metro police officers indicated that unqualified instructors are teaching at police colleges without knowledge and skills as they witness them when attending refresher courses on periodical basis.

Poor top management: About 19 participants mentioned lack of educated, knowledgeable and qualified top and middle management as a resource that was

lacking to combat and reduce. Participants 15 and 30 aver that lack of good and accomplished managers has negative impact on the department's direction in terms of crime prevention strategy.

These findings concur with literature that there are poor top management (Coleman, 2012:365). The reason is that metro police officers are not getting good leadership in terms of total quality management and strategic directions on police operations as they do not secure enough budget to buy vehicles and other tools of trade to achieve their objectives.

Lack of office equipment: Participants 27 and 43 mentioned lack of laptops, printing machines and papers as hampering crime prevention, combating and reduction intention. Similarly, participants 17 and 25 indicated that lack of copies on their pre- and -post vehicle inspections caused by lack of photocopy machines, cartridges and offices.

These findings of participants concur with the literature that there is a lack of office equipment (Mokoena, 2007:142). The reason is that metro police officers cannot print out work pre-inspection copies for vehicles, police administration, no adequate scanning machines, tables, chairs and offices for police officers.

Specialised services

In responding to the question of availability of specialized services, the following were responses:

Adequate specialised services: About 39 participants mentioned that there are many specialised services within the metro police that can enable them to combat and prevent crime. Participants 9 and 7 indicated that specialised services within metro police ranks are illegitimate and under-resourced. Participants 41 and 44 concurred with the statements shared by Participants 9 and 7 that metro police are not allowed to form, establish, or intend to construct a special crime combating and prevention division. Participant 8 also indicated these arguments

that metro police had established rogue units posing as crime combating forces while they do not have authority as outlined in the Constitution.

These findings concur with literature that there are adequate specialised services in the metro police divisions (Zhu, Alpcan, Panaous, Tambe & Casey, 2016:19). The reason is that metro police officers work at different specialised units that are not well-equipped with resources like crime prevention training, motor vehicles, tools of trade and enough budget to function.

The following were most mentioned specialised services by the 45 participants in this study:

Road Traffic Policing Unit: All 45 of the participants mentioned that metro police have road traffic policing unit to combat and prevent crime.

Participants mentioned that they are appointed in terms of the National Road Traffic Act which gives them powers to administer road policing. Participants further stated as traffic officers they have powers to control, monitor and manage road incidents and accidents. All participants indicated that they are issuing traffic fines, notices and conducting point duty at major roads during peak hours. These findings concur with literature that there are road policing unit (Shaw, 2016:991) The reason is that metro police officers are always working on the road issuing traffic fines and controlling traffic flow during peak hours on a specific busy intersection. The other reason is that they were taught traffic signs and traffic regulations in their academy.

By-law Unit: 45 participants mentioned that metro police have road traffic policing unit to combat and prevent crime. Participants 1, 12, 18 and 24 mentioned that they were appointed in terms of the Municipal Systems Act (MSA) which gives them powers to enforce municipal bylaws as prescribed. Participants 5, 7 and 28 stated MPS as municipal workers in security cluster they mandated to regulate and implement municipal ordinances, regulations, and by-law past by

council. Participants 29, 37, 42, 45 and 41 indicated that they are issuing by-law fines, notices, attending noise pollutions and checking illegal and legal traders.

These findings concur with literature that there are by-law unit (Cordner, 2014:343). The reason is that metro police officers work at by-law units within their respective metro police workstations where they inspect hawkers permits and confiscate goods for non-compliance. The other reason is that MPS are attending bylaws complaint and incidents as per city's bylaw requirements.

Crime Prevention Unit: About 35 of the participants mentioned that metro police have road traffic policing unit to combat and prevent crime. Metro police officers work at crime prevention unit within their respective metro police workstations where they conduct drug operations and crowd control operations supporting the SAPS.

Participants 9, 12, 19 and 21 mentioned that they are performing crime prevention duties of visible patrol and police complaints. While Participants 4, 13, 23 and 32 stated that MPS perform joint crime prevention operations with SAPS during festive season. Participants 36, 39 and 44 indicated that they are arresting suspected criminals, stopping and searching motorists as part of their crime prevention mandate. In contrast, Participants 11, 17 and 24 disagree by mention that MPS are not mandated in terms of the Constitution and SAPS Act to conduct crime prevention, reduction and combating.

Participants agree with the literature that SAPS is the only organisation in South Africa mandated to combat and prevent crime. These findings concur with literature that crime prevention is the responsibility of the SAPS in terms of SAPS Act and the Constitution (Rauch, 2001:15).

VIP Protection Unit: All 45 of the participants mentioned that metro police have VIP Protection Unit to combat and prevent crime.

Participants 14, 19, 26 and 33 mentioned that MPS have VIP Protection Unit responsible for driving and protecting Mayor, Speaker of the Council and Member of Mayoral Committee. Participants 28, 34 and 37 indicated that trained MPS are driving political heads of the governing party. Similarly, Participants 5, 8 and 15 mentioned that MPS attends VIP protection training which includes advance driving, defence driving and self-defence tactics in the SAPS. These findings concur with literature that there are VIP protection unit in the MPS (Body-Gendrots, 2012:109). There are metro police officers who protect and drive mayors, city managers and member of mayoral committees on a daily basis.

Property Protection Unit: Over a third (15) of the participants mentioned that metro police have Property Protection Unit to combat and prevent crime. These findings concur with literature. There are metro police officers who protect, secure and safeguard the city's properties, installations, infrastructures and assets against vandalism, who are subordinates of the participants.

Participants 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5 mentioned that MPS have Property protection unit responsible for safeguarding and protection of municipal assets. While participants 30, 39 and 43 disagree with the notion that MPS protect municipal property by indicating that the city has hired private security to protect assets of the city. Participants 8, 10 and 11 indicated that MPS are deployed to monitor, supervise and manage the private deployed security officers on sites. Similarly, Participants 6 and 15 mentioned that MPS conduct management oversight, surprise visits on private security deployed and monitoring their work ethics. These findings concur with literature that there are Property Protection unit in the MPS (Madihlaba 2018:136).

Cable Theft Unit: Over a third 15 of the participants mentioned that metro police have Cable Theft Unit to combat and prevent crime. These findings concur with literature. Participants 8, 23 and 14 mentioned that MPS are patrolling targeted electricity network which are overhead and underground. Participants 18 and 35 indicated that MPS are arresting people with suspected stolen cables.

In contrast, Participants 6, 9, 11 and 13 agreed that MPS are conducting joint crime prevention operations with SAPS to scrapyards looking for stolen municipal electrical cables. These findings concur with literature that there are Cable theft unit in the MPS (Montesh 2011:19). There are metro police officers who patrol underground, overhead, electrical depot and electrical substations daily to prioritise the protection of cables. Majority of participants mentioned that they don't have cable theft unit in their area.

Freeway Unit: All 45 of the participants mentioned that metro police have Freeway Unit to combat and prevent crime. Participants 8, 13, 16 and 33 agreed that MPS are issuing traffic fines and notices in the freeway. These findings concur with literature that MPS are deployed to manage and control traffic congestion during peak-hours at the major freeways (Van Biljon, 2014:4). In contrast, Participants 20, 29 and 36 outlined that there are MPS who are deployed at the freeway offramp and onramp to manage traffic movement. These findings concur with literature that there are freeway unit in the MPS. Most participants mentioned that they are patrolling freeway, attending incidents and accidents and setting speed cameras on the freeway.

Traffic Fine Tracing Unit: About ten of the participants mentioned that metro police have Traffic Fine Tracing Unit to combat and prevent crime. They specifically trace and track with the intention to recoup council money owed by motorists on issued traffic fines. Participants 16, 21 and 37 mentioned that they no longer having tracing units. Similarly, Participants 34, 36 and 44 agreed that they are now administer traffic offences in terms of Administrative Adjudication of Road Traffic Offences Act (AARTO). These findings concur with literature AARTO notices that there are administrative processes to deal with non-compliant motorists.

Tactical Response Unit: 28 of the participants mentioned that metro police have tactical response unit to combat and prevent crime.

Participants 7, 18, 20 and 25 mentioned that MPS have tactical response unit. In contrast, Participants 21, 22 and 38 outlined that there are tactical response units in the MPS who deployed officers to monitor identified hotspots. These findings agree with the literature that MPS are responding on serious crimes and vehicle speed chase operations complementing SAPS as they are also using SAPS radio channels. Most participants mentioned that they are responding on cash in transit, robbery and other serious crime incidents.

Crowd Control Unit: 45 participants mentioned that metro police have crowd control unit to combat and prevent crime.

Participants 12, 23, 24 and 37 mentioned that MPS have crowd control unit. In contrast, Participants 26, 29 and 39 outlined that MPS are responding to service delivery protests, strikes and marches (Montesh, 2011:19). Participants 22, 27, 40 and 41 indicated that number of armoured vehicles were bought to assist in transporting officers to the areas where there are crowd. These findings concur with literature by Madihlaba, (2018:147) that MPS is supporting SAPS in controlling crowd during formal and informal gatherings which is happening in the city to ensure that they comply with the rule of the law.

Social Crime Prevention Unit: 41 participants mentioned that metro police have social crime prevention unit to combat and prevent crime. These findings concur with literature (Rauch, 2001:15) mentions that metro police officers who daily conduct awareness campaigns and education on crime, danger of taking and abusing drugs in society. Participants 3, 4, 34 and 38 mentioned that MPS have social crime prevention unit. In contrast, Participants 6, 9 and 13 outlined that MPS are conducting drug awareness and women abuse campaigns in the schools and churches (Montesh, 2011:19). Participants 11, 19, 28 and 34 indicated that MPS are having social cohesions sessions with identified people. These findings concur with literature by Schneider (2015:290) that MPS is providing social crime prevention roadshows and social crime sports activities to the community.

Land Invasion Unit: 45 participants mentioned that metro police have Land Invasion Unit to combat and prevent crime. Participants 4, 8, 12 and 15 mentioned that MPS have land invasion unit. In contrast, participants 16, 19 and 29 agreed that MPS are attending land invasion complains, incidents and protests (Montesh, 2011:19). Participants 14, 22, 44 and 45 indicated that number of armoured vehicles were bought to assist in transporting officers dealing with land invasion issues. These findings concur with literature by Madihlaba, (2018:147) that MPS is managing and protecting land of the city against illegal occupation and use. All participants agreed that MPS has land invasion unit. There are metro police officers who monitor and secure the city's land by constantly patrolling hotspots areas.

Intelligence Gathering Unit: Participants 37 and 42 mentioned that metro police have Intelligence Gathering Unit to combat and prevent crime. Similarly, participant 18 stated that: *"They have established illegal intelligent covert unit"*. In contrast, Participant 13, 14 and 17 mentioned that MPS does not have authority to establish intelligence unit in terms of the Constitution and SAPS Act. These findings concur with literature that metro police officers do not have power to investigate crime (Montesh, 2011:9).

Task Force Unit: Just over a third of the 14 participants mentioned that metro police have task force unit to combat and prevent crime. Participants 22, 25, 32 and 36 mentioned that metro police have established illegal task force unit. These findings concur with literature that metro police officers who are complementing SAPS on specialised joint operations who are specifically working together daily. In contrast, Participant 13, 14 and 17 mentioned that MPS does not have authority to establish task force unit in terms of the Constitution and SAPS Act. Similarly, Participants 24, 26, and 37 indicated that MPS are conducting illegal raids and police operations in the communities. These findings concur with literature that metro police officers do not have power to form task force unit (Montesh, 2011:9).

Drug or K-9 Unit: All 45 participants mentioned that metro police have Drug Unit to combat and prevent crime. Participants 16 and 15 mentioned that the lack of dog training facilities where they depend on SAPS and security service providers to train them. In contrast, Participant 18, 19 and 23 mentioned that MPS have established drug and K9 unit. These findings concur with literature that MPS have drug crime (Chambliss & Hass, 2012:7). Participants 4, 17, 19 and 26 outlined that MPS conduct drug search and seizure, identification of drugs, dealing with drug addicts and also using sniffer dogs to pursue drug dealers.

Equestrian Unit: All 45 participants mentioned that metro police have equestrian unit to combat and prevent crime. These findings concur with literature that there are equestrian unit (Arain, 2014:95). Participants 4, 23, 26, 29 and 33 agreed that MPS uses horses for patrolling the high hills and valleys of city's mountains, parks and river daily. In contrast, Participant 11, 18 and 28 mentioned that MPS are using horses during festive season to police resorts. These findings concur with literature that MPS have equestrian units (Chambliss & Hass, 2012:7).

5.9 RECOMMENDATIONS BASED ON RESEARCH FINDINGS FOR THE BETTER CRIME PREVENTION THEORY AND POLICING MODEL

Research objective 7: To provide recommendations based on research findings for the better crime prevention and policing theory/model to deal with crime holistically between metro police divisions and SAPS. The next research question was sought to provide recommendations based on research findings for the better crime prevention and policing theory/model to deal with crime between metro police divisions and SAPS.

The following research question was asked and it was aimed at achieving the above objective:

Research question 7: What would you recommend to be effective methods of metro police officers to be in helping the police to combat crime?

The following responses were proposed by the majority of participants:

- Metro police officers should have powers to investigate crime.

- Power to conduct crime prevention training and set their police professional standard.
- Power to combat, reduce and prevent crime.
- Power to establish crime combating units.
- Power to defy political influence and interference.
- Power to store and preserve evidence.
- Power to own accused holding cells.
- Power to conduct crime statistics.
- Develop Municipal Police Service Act.
- Have adequate resources.
- Have adequate budget.
- Have qualified and experienced instructors.
- Review metro police promotion, recruitment and selection criteria.
- Encourage and intensify relationship with SAPS and community.
- Have police training which is in line with SAPS training.
- Have on job career-oriented and determined police officers.
- Form legal advisory unit.
- Involve community participation by developing word base system.
- Work beyond their municipal boundaries.
- Encourage police skills development and education.
- Chief of Police not reporting to Municipal Manager.
- Have national metro police commissioner.

The above indicated proposed responses from participants were also mentioned in the literature (Montesh, 2011:19).

5.10 SUMMARY

This chapter dealt with qualitative research findings. One-on-one interviews were conducted with the Police management of the following metropolitan cities: TMPD, EMPD and JMPD as selected participants to the study. The study dealt with participants of different types of race, gender, position, length of service and educational qualifications was mentioned in this chapter. There were 45 (100%)

participants from the three mentioned municipalities that participated in this study and they were 15 each all members from senior management of the MPDs. The purpose of interviewing top management is because they are involved in the strategic operational planning part of day-to-day functions in their metropolitan cities.

The researcher made a very conclusive decision with regards to the location where interviews were conducted. The researcher mentioned number of places where the interviews conducted including workplace, residential areas or any area chosen by the responded. The researcher in this study conducted telephonic interviews owing to coronavirus (COVID-19) and Disaster Management Act restrictions. The researcher presented the qualitative research findings where 45 participants gave same replies, which the researcher grouped them in that particular response. In cases where the participant responded independently on important research characteristic, the researcher recited them verbatim to give voices to the partakers.

CHAPTER 6: PRESENTATION OF QUANTITATIVE FINDINGS

6.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter deals with the findings and analysis of the data collected using the survey questionnaire. The study collected data from three metropolitan cities, namely, Ekurhuleni, Johannesburg and Tshwane. The analysis will be presented using descriptive statistics and inferential statistics. The chapter will start with the measurement of the internal consistency reliability of the study using Cronbach alpha. The study's response rate is then presented followed by the assessment of the instrument's validity using exploratory factor analysis. Factor analysis was done to determine whether items in a construct are measuring what they intend to measure by having items measuring the same issue being highly correlated.

The profile of the sample and the characteristics of the variables are then presented using descriptive statistics in the form of frequencies, proportions, means, and standard deviations. The descriptive statistics are used to answer the first five objectives of the study. Composite variables were then constructed by averaging or summing up the items as proposed by Boone and Boone (2011). Using the composite variables comparative analysis are then presented using the independent t-tests and one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA). Furthermore, the comparative analysis was done to assist in the recommendations and development of the model and in this case, it was to determine whether the results differ by municipality, gender, qualification, whether one worked for the municipality before, tenure and position. The independent t-tests were used to determine whether the differences exist by gender and by whether one has worked for the municipality before.

The one-way analysis was done to determine whether the views of the respondent differed by municipality, qualification, number of years working or the municipal police (tenure) and the position / rank of the respondent. The degree

to which the main constructs are related was measured using correlation analysis. More importantly, the correlation analysis assisted the researcher in determining which variables are related, which will then be used to determine the model. The results from the comparative analysis are used to determine whether the social demographic characteristics are moderators in the model. The findings and interpretation of the data are now presented in the next sections.

6.2 RELIABILITY OF THE INSTRUMENT

Cronbach alpha was used to determine the internal reliability of the instrument and it varies between 1 (perfect internal reliability) and 0 (no internal reliability). The rule of thumb proposed by Jain and Angural (2017) for interpretation of the reliability was used where, a Cronbach alpha of $\alpha \geq .9$ excellent; $.9 > \alpha \geq .8$ good; $.8 > \alpha \geq .7$ acceptable; $.7 > \alpha \geq .6$ questionable; $.6 > \alpha \geq .5$ s poor and $< .5$ unacceptable. The results of the Cronbach alpha are tabulated in Table 6.1.

Table 6.1: Reliability analysis using Cronbach alpha

Construct	No. of items	Cronbach's alpha	Acceptable level
Barriers / obstacles	13	.897	Good
Solutions	13	.906	Excellent
Roles	19	.874	Good
Crime prevention duration	21	.951	Excellent
Crime prevention training	21	.952	Excellent
Additional powers and functions for metro police officers	11	.924	Excellent
Partnership roles	5	.905	Excellent
Total	103	.946	Excellent

No construct had items removed from the analysis owing to low-reliability and all constructs had reliabilities of .8 and above observed. In this case, the minimum acceptable threshold of .7 as proposed by Jain and Angural (2017) was achieved. The instrument had 103 items and an overall reliability of .946 which was excellent, and the test confirmed that the questionnaire was a reliable instrument and could be used for further data analysis.

6.3 RESPONSE RATE

As mentioned in methodology, the grand total population sampling of all three Gauteng metropolitan police officers is 8674. According to Krejcie and Morgan (1970), a population of 8674 would have a sample size of 368. The population of all the different police officers across all the ranks was beyond 5000. The response rate is presented in Table 6.2.

Table 6.2 Response rate of the sample:

Item	Number
Total population of police officers	8 674
Questionnaires administered to employees	n = 368
Initial total responses	210
Non-usable responses	50
Total usable responses	160
Usable responses rate	43.4%

A total of 210 questionnaires were received and when the missing value analysis was carried out, only 160 had missing information below 10%. According to Hair, et al. (2019:62), missing data under 10% for an individual case or observation can generally be ignored, except in the case where the missing data occurred in a specific non-random pattern.

A total of 50 cases had missing data of over 10% and were dropped from the analysis leaving 160 questionnaires being valid for further analysis. Baruch and Holtom (2008) examined 17 refereed academic journals and found 490 different studies that utilised the survey research design and the average response for the studies that utilised data collected from individuals was 52.7% with a standard deviation of 20.4 while the average response rate for studies that utilise data collected from the organisation was 35.7% with a standard deviation of 18.8.

The response rate for the study was 43.4% was adequate since it was collected from an organisation that satisfies Baruch and Haltom's (2008) guidelines of an acceptable response rate since it is above 35.7%.

- DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON DEMOGRAPHIC PROFILE OF RESPONDENTS

There were 160 metropolitan police officers from TMPD, EMPD and JMPD who participated in the study. However, participation was voluntary, and, in some instances, some respondents chose not to answer specific questions resulting in the sample size being less than 160. The other values of 157 in the next table resulted from three people who decided not to give their race status.

There were other values of 155 where five people decided not to indicate if they worked for the metropolitan police before. The researcher indicated three participants who did not indicate their rank/position in their current municipal police structure.

Also noted on the table are the values of 159 where 1 respondent each decided not to mention on their educational qualification, race and age status. One participant who did not mentioned the number of years working as municipal police which resulted into the values of 159 respondents. These different values are indicated in the next table. Others to feature in this chapter was anticipated since this data collection method was a self-administered using survey

questionnaire where one person might decide not to answer all or some questions.

The reasonable expectations are that you should not expect everything to be 160. I carried a missing value analysis, and 160 records were found to have missing value of less than 10%.

The explained demographic information is presented in Table 6.3.

Table 6.3: Demographic profile of the respondents:

Variable	Category	Frequency	%
Municipality	Tshwane	71	44.4%
	Johannesburg	43	26.9%
	Ekurhuleni	46	28.7%
	Total	160	100 .0%
Gender	Male	96	60.4%
	Female	63	39.6%
	Total	159	100 .0%
Age	At most 35 years	32	20.1%
	36 – 40 years	33	20.8%
	41 – 45 years	40	25.2%
	46 – 50 years	26	16.4%
	51 years and above	28	17.6%
	Total	159	100 .0%
Race	Black	118	75.2%
	Coloured	13	8.3%
	Indian	2	1.3%
	White	24	15.3%

Variable	Category	Frequency	%
	Total	157	100 .0%
Highest educational qualification	Standard 10/Grade 12 and below	22	13.8%
	Certificate	16	10.1%
	Diploma	90	56.6%
	Degree / postgraduate degree	31	19.5%
	Total	159	100 .0%
Have worked in municipal police	Yes	93	60.0%
	No	62	40.0%
	Total	155	100 .0%
Years working in municipal Police	At most 5 years	19	11.9%
	6 - 10 years	22	13.8%
	11 - 15 years	35	22.0%
	16 - 20 years	32	20.1%
	More than 20 years	51	32.1%
	Total	159	100 .0%
Position / rank	Superintended	65	41.4%
	Inspector	43	27.4%
	Sergeant	14	8.9%
	Constable	35	22.3%
	Total	157	100 .0%

MPS from three big Gauteng metropolitan cities participated in the study where 44.4% (n=71) were from Tshwane, 28.7% (n=46) were from Ekurhuleni and

26.9% (n=43) were from Johannesburg. About 160 survey questionnaires were completed and returned by participants from the rank of constables /sergeants, Inspectors and superintendents.

In terms of gender, the distribution of males to female was almost in the ratio 3:2 where 60.4% (n=96) being males and 39.6% (n=63) being females which resulted into 159. This is in line with the police office profession since the majority of police officers are males. Metro police were formed by combining both females and males from the old traffic authority and the post security services within the city council.

About 20.1% (n=32) of the police officers were aged at most 35 years, 20.8% (n=33) were aged 36 – 40 years, 25.2% (n=40) were aged 41 – 45 years, 16.4% (n=26) were aged between 46 – 50 years and 17.6% (n=28) were aged 51 years and above. It can be noted that close to 45% were aged between 36 – 40 years old.

The race differentiation of the sample is such that 75.2% (n=118) was black, 15.3% (n=24) were whites, 8.3% (n=13) were coloureds and 1.3% (n=2) were Indians.

The educational distribution of the sample showed that the largest proportion of respondents were diploma holders with a proportion of 56.6% (n=90). The information further indicates that 19.5% (n=31) had a degree or a postgraduate degree; 13.8% (n=220) had standard 10 / grade 12 and below while 10.1% (n=16) were certificate holders.

About 60% (n=93) had worked for the metropolitan police before while 40% (n=62) had not worked for the municipal police before. Therefore, the ratio was 3:2. This was because most participants worked on their former district, regional,

and local council municipalities which ended up dissolved to form the chosen existing metropolitan police division.

The job tenure of the sample indicates that only 11.9% (n=19) of the respondents had at most 5 years' experience, while 13.8% (n=22) had 6 – 10 years' experience, 22% (n=35) had 11 – 15 years' experience, 20.1% (n=32) had 16 – 20 years' experience and 32.1% (n=51) had more than 20 years' experience as metro police officers. The results show that most of the police officers had more than 15 years' experience.

The employee's position / rank in the organisation of the sample indicates that 41.4% (n= 65) were superintendents, 27.4% (n=43) were inspectors, 22.3% (n=35) were constables and 8.9% (n=14) were sergeants. The reasons for choosing the mentioned ranks were because there are on daily basis working on 12 hours shifts and relevant on clarifying metro police duties (operational members).

Objective: To outline the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng.

6.4 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON OBSTACLES

The respondents were asked on the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng. There were three types of questions. There were Likert type of question that were assessed on a five-point Likert scale that ranged from 1 (not to any extent at all) to 5 (to a very large extent). One type of questions was a nominal scale where the respondents indicated that they agreed or not and the last type of questions were open-ended question which meant to solicit qualitative type of answers. In terms of the Likert scale type of question a mean of at least 3.5 or a proportion of at least 50% for a very large extent or to a large extent meant that the issue

was happening to a large extent. The issues are presented in the next subsections.

6.4.1 Descriptive statistics on barriers / obstacles

The respondents were given 13 issues to indicate the extent to which these were barriers or obstacles in hampering effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers. The information is shown in Table 6.4.

Table 6.4: Descriptive statistics on barriers / obstacles:

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To a very large extent	To a large extent	To a some extent	To a small extent	To a Not any extent at all	
Q8h. Political interference and influence on operations and administration.	63.5% (99)	12.2% (19)	13.5% (21)	7.7% (12)	3.2% (5)	4.25
Q8b. Lack of necessary and optimal police resources.	47.7% (74)	26.5% (41)	15.5% (24)	6.5% (10)	3.9% (6)	4.08
Q8a. Legislative restrictions and limitations on powers and functions of metro police.	41.9% (65)	20.6% (32)	24.5% (38)	8.4% (13)	4.5% (7)	3.87
Q8c. Control and management of metro police by non-police executive such as municipal manager.	33.3% (52)	28.2% (44)	26.3% (41)	8.3% (13)	3.8% (6)	3.79
Q8f. Unfair and unjust recruitment selection process on new metro police recruits.	34.6% (54)	26.3% (41)	26.9% (42)	7.7% (12)	4.5% (7)	3.79
Q8e. Poor in-service training.	31.4% (47)	24.2% (36)	32.7% (49)	8.5% (13)	3.2% (5)	3.72

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To a very large extent	To a large extent	To a some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q8d. Lack of proper policing skills and development on crime prevention.	(48)	(37)	(50)	(13)	(5)	3.55
	27.1%	24.5%	30.3%	12.9%	5.2%	
Q8i. Short period of training by unqualified trainers.	(42)	(38)	(47)	(20)	(8)	3.31
	25.8%	15.5%	36.1%	9.0%	13.5%	
Q8g. Duplication of policing functions of metro police with SAPS functions.	(40)	(24)	(56)	(14)	(21)	3.29
	22.9%	20.9%	30.1%	14.4%	11.8%	
Q8l. Lack of investigation powers by metro police.	(35)	(32)	(46)	(22)	(18)	3.22
	35.7%	12.7%	14.0%	13.4%	24.2%	
Q8j. Teaching of outdated curriculum at the police college.	(56)	(20)	(22)	(21)	(38)	3.16
	22.7%	14.9%	30.5%	19.5%	12.3%	
Q8m. Lack of preservation of evidence and cases in court of law.	(35)	(23)	(47)	(30)	(19)	3.10
	26.9%	18.6%	16.0%	14.1%	24.4%	
Q8k. Lack of signed metro police operational policies and plans.	(42)	(29)	(25)	(22)	(38)	3.08
	16.9%	20.1%	34.4%	11.7%	16.9%	
	(26)	(31)	(53)	(18)	(26)	

The issues that were considered barriers or obstacles had compositions of more than 50% in terms of to a considerable extent or to a large extent and a mean above 3.5%. About 75.7% indicated that political interference and influence on operations and administration was a barrier to a large extent with a mean of 4.25

and 74.2% indicated lack of necessary and optimal police resources as a barrier to a large extent with a mean of 4.08. About 62.5% also found legislative restrictions and limitations on powers and functions of metro police as barriers to a large extent, in comparison to 61.5% believed that control and management of metro police by non-police executive such as municipal manager were barriers / obstacles to a large extent and 60.9% indicated unfair and unjust recruitment selection process on new metro police recruits as a barrier.

When asked whether poor in-service training was a barrier or obstacle, 31.4% indicated to a very large extent and 24.2% indicated to a large extent resulting in a proportion of 55.6% indicating that it is a barrier to at least a large extent. About 51.6% indicated that lack of proper policing skills and development on crime prevention was a barrier to a large extent with a mean of 3.55.

Some items had overall means close to three indicating that the issues were barriers to some extent. The issues were:

- Short period of training by unqualified trainers ($M = 3.31$);
- Duplication of policing functions of metro police with SAPS functions ($M = 3.29$);
- Lack of investigation powers by metro police ($M = 3.22$);
- Teaching of outdated curriculum at the police college ($M = 3.16$);
- Lack of preservation of evidence and cases in court of law ($M = 3.10$); and
- Lack of signed metro police operational policies and plans ($M = 3.08$).

The results show that the issues are barriers/obstacles to a large extent or to some extent. Political interference seems to be the biggest barrier, followed by a lack of optimal police resources and legislative restrictions on crime prevention.

The respondents were asked if these barriers/obstacles negatively affected metro police officers during execution of their crime prevention duties and 86% of operational members agreed while 14% disagreed. The higher proportion that agreed gave the following reasons tabulated in Table 6.5:

Table 6.5: Negative impact of barriers / obstacles on police officer's execution of duties (n=69):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Influence of politicians affecting productivity of members	19	27.50%
Have made it very difficult for officers to work	13	18.80%
No enough skills and training to handle situations	11	15.90%
Lack of necessary and optimal police resources	8	11.60%
Lack of proper policing skills	6	8.70%
Unfair labour practices, unjust recruitment and selection process	5	7.20%
Lack of proper training in the opening of case dockets	4	5.80%
Undermining of the criminal procedure act at court	3	4.30%
Lack of preservation of evidence and cases in court of law	3	4.30%
Lack of support and too many social media influence powers of police	1	1.40%
Poor communication	1	1.40%
Poor management skills	1	1.40%

This was a multiple response question where respondents gave more than one response. About 27.5% indicated that the influence of politicians was affecting the productivity of members, while 18.8% attributed to the fact that the conditions have made it difficult for officers to work. About 15.9% attributed it to the fact that the police officers do not have enough crime prevention skills and training to handle situations, 11.6% indicated the lack of necessary and optimal police resources, 8.7% indicated lack of proper policing skills while 7.2% contributed it to unfair labour practices, unjust recruitment and selection processes.

The other reasons given for the negative effect of barriers were lack of proper training in the opening of case dockets (5.8%), undermining of the Criminal Procedure Act at court (4.3%), lack of preservation of evidence and cases in court of law (4.3%), lack of support and too many social media influence powers of police, poor communication and poor management skills.

The few operational members who indicated that the obstacles do not negatively affect metro police officers gave the reason that the metro police are able to work under these conditions and pressure every time.

6.4.2 Descriptive statistics on solutions to obstacles

The respondents were given 13 statements to indicate whether there were solutions if put forward to address barriers/obstacles affecting metro police officers during execution of their crime prevention roles. The information is presented in Table 6.6.

Table 6.6: Descriptive statistics on solutions to obstacles:

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q10c. Authority over metro police by a well-trained top metro police executive.	60.9% (95)	23.1% (36)	14.1% (22)	1.9% (3)	-	4.43
Q10b. Provision of optimal police resources.	57.9% (92)	23.9% (38)	12.6% (20)	5.7% (9)	-	4.34

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q10h. Independent regulation protecting metro police on political interference and influence.	63.1% (101)	16.9% (27)	13.1% (21)	4.4% (7)	2.5% (4)	4.34
Q10d. Related metro police operational and development skills on police standard, behaviour, discipline, management and interpersonal skills.	55.1% (87)	24.1% (38)	15.2% (24)	5.7% (9)	- -	4.28
Q10e. Up-to-date in-service training on crowd control, police standard, deployment strategy, police attitude, professionalism and investigative skills.	46.9% (75)	32.5% (52)	15.6% (25)	5.0% (8)	- -	4.21
Q10f. Transparent and fair recruitment selection on the new municipal police officers.	54.4% (87)	20.6% (33)	11.3% (18)	11.9% (19)	1.9% (3)	4.14
Q10i. Intensive police training period as specified by SAPS Act.	46.5% (73)	19.7% (31)	21.0% (33)	8.3% (13)	4.5% (7)	3.96
Q10a. Draft new regulation that will give additional powers to metro police on crime prevention role.	44.9% (71)	24.1% (38)	19.0% (30)	5.1% (8)	7.0% (11)	3.95

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q10m. Clear metro police policies and procedures on promotions.	52.3% (81)	11.6% (18)	19.4% (30)	6.5% (10)	10.3% (16)	3.89
Q10j. Up to date metro police curriculum on teaching and training.	40.0% (64)	21.3% (34)	24.4% (39)	6.3% (10)	8.1% (13)	3.79
Q10k. Endorsed metro police operational policies and procedures.	31.9% (51)	24.4% (39)	25.6% (41)	11.3% (18)	6.9% (11)	3.63
Q10g. Clear separation of powers between SAPS and MPS.	30.6% (49)	21.9% (35)	28.1% (45)	12.5% (20)	6.9% (11)	3.57
Q10l. Regulation enabling metro police to investigate and collect evidence on crime committed in their municipal jurisdiction.	38.1% (61)	16.3% (26)	20.0% (32)	15.0% (24)	10.6% (17)	3.56

All the issues were regarded as solutions and evidence by means of greater than 3.5 and more than 50% indicated that there were solutions at least to a large extent. The issues that were suggested as solutions were in means of at least 4 and by more than 70% of the respondents were:

- Authority over metro police by a well-trained top metro police executive (84%);
- Provision of optimal police resources (81.8%);

- Independent regulation protecting metro police on political interference and influence (80%);
- Related metro police operational and skills development on police standard, behaviour, discipline, management and interpersonal (79.2%);
- Up-to-date in-service training on crowd control, police standard, deployment strategy, police attitude, professionalism and investigative skills (79.4%); and
- Transparent and fair recruitment selection on the new municipal police officers (75%).

These issues were regarded as solutions with a large proportion of the operational member's respondents. About 66.2% of participants indicated intensive police training period as specified by SAPS Act as a solution to a large extent with a mean of 3.96, 69% indicating draft of a new regulation that will give additional powers to metro police on crime prevention role as a solution with a mean of 3.95 and 63.9% indicating clear metro police policies and procedures on promotions was a solution to a large extent with a mean of 3.89.

When asked whether up-to-date metro police curriculum on teaching and training is a solution, 61.3% of the participants indicated at least to a large extent, 56.3% endorsed metro police operational policies and procedures solutions to a large extent. About 52.5% indicated clear separation of powers between SAPS and MPS as solutions to a large extent while 54.4% said that regulation enabling metro police to investigate, obtain and collect evidence on crime committed in their municipal jurisdiction would be a solution to a large extent.

When the respondents were asked if the mentioned solutions will adequately address the barriers/obstacles that are hampering metro police officers from combating crime, about 78.8% said yes, that is, agreed and 21.2% disagreed. Those in agreement gave the following reasons in Table 6.7.

Table 6.7: Adequacy of solutions to address barriers/obstacles (n=43):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Metro police functions of processes similar to those of SAPS functions	9	20.90%
Intensive crime prevention training to keep metro police up to date with latest criminal trends	7	16.30%
Independent regulation protecting metro police	6	14.00%
They are well articulated in accordance with the needed ideas	6	14.00%
This will enable metro police to be competent and independent	5	11.60%
Clear standards and procedures are set and outlined that will be better for metro police force	5	11.60%
Professionalism and investigative skills	2	4.70%
Used before and crime was down	1	2.30%
Provision of optimal police resources	1	2.30%
There must be up to date in-service training on crowd control	1	2.30%
It can help to revive the spirit of the already discouraged members	1	2.30%
Will give certainty to members and improve their approach when it comes to policing	1	2.30%

This was a multiple response question. The reasons given for the justification were that about 20.9% indicated that metro police functions of processes were similar to those of SAPS functions, 16.3% said intensive training to keep metro police up-to-date with latest criminal trends, 14% were of the opinion that independent regulation protecting metro police, 14% said that there are well

articulated in accordance with the needed ideas, 11.6% indicated that the solutions will enable metro police to be competent and independent. About 11.6% said that clear standards and procedures are set and outlined that will be better for metro police force.

The other reasons given for justifying the issues as solutions to address barriers/obstacles were professionalism and investigative skills, used before and crime was down, provision of optimal police resources, up-to date in-service training on crowd control, reviving of the spirit of the already discouraged members that will give certainty to members and improve their approach when it comes to policing.

Those who indicated that the solutions were not adequate to address the barriers or obstacles gave the following reasons which are given in Table 6.8.

Table 6.8: Non-adequacy of solutions to address barriers / obstacles(n=12):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
No clear metro police policies and procedures on promotions	7	58.3
Lack of professionalism because everyone minds his /her business	2	16.7
The intense processes will prevent the temptation of corruption	1	8.3
No management skills	1	8.3
No powers to conduct crime prevention operations	1	8.3

Only 12 people (7.6%) disagreed and the majority of these people said that the issues will not be solutions to address the barriers / obstacles since there was no clear metro police policies and procedures on recruitment, selection promotions and some indicated lack of professionalism because everyone minds his /her

business. The other issues indicated were that of intense processes in prevent the temptation of corruption, no management skills and no powers to conduct crime prevention operations.

Objective: To investigate different functions being provided by MPS that could be effective in preventing crime in Gauteng

6.5 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON FUNCTIONS AND RESPONSIBILITIES OF METRO POLICE

The respondents were asked on issues on different functions provided by MPS that could be effective in preventing crime in Gauteng. The issues were measured using 5-point Likert scale, nominal scales and open-ended questions as previously mentioned. The issues are presented in the next subsections.

6.5.1 Descriptive statistics on functions and responsibilities of metro police

There were 19 items where the respondents were asked to indicate whether there were functions and responsibilities of MPS. The items are tabulated in Table 6.9.

Table 6.9: Descriptive statistics on functions and responsibilities of metro police:

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q12b. Writing traffic fines.	72.8% (115)	15.2% (24)	7.0% (11)	5.1% (8)	- -	4.56
Q12c. Issuing of road traffic and by-laws notices.	67.5% (105)	17.8% (28)	9.6% (15)	5.1% (8)	- -	4.48
Q12d. Observing of accidents.	62.7% (99)	20.3% (32)	13.3% (21)	3.8% (6)	- -	4.42
Q12a. Patrolling the streets.	65.8% (104)	13.9% (22)	13.9% (22)	4.4% (7)	1.9% (3)	4.37
Q12e. Control and monitoring of road traffic flow.	59.2% (93)	17.8% (28)	12.7% (20)	10.2% (16)	- -	4.26
Q12k. Arresting and detaining of a suspect.	45.0% (72)	25.0% (40)	20.0% (32)	3.8% (6)	6.3% (10)	3.99
Q12j. Controlling of crowd in service delivery, unrest and strike situation.	49.4% (79)	23.8% (38)	11.3% (18)	5.0% (8)	10.6% (17)	3.96
Q12f. Confiscating of hawker's goods.	39.2% (62)	14.6% (23)	17.7% (28)	19.6% (31)	8.9% (14)	3.56
Q12i. Attending to selling of goods without license.	38.1% (61)	14.4% (23)	21.9% (35)	15.0% (24)	10.6% (17)	3.54

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q12h. Attending to noise complaint.	29.7% (47)	21.5% (34)	24.7% (39)	19.0% (30)	5.1% (8)	3.52
Q12g. Checking to business licenses.	37.1% (59)	18.9% (30)	15.7% (25)	13.2% (21)	15.1% (24)	3.50
Q12s. Identifying crime hot spots.	36.9% (59)	17.59% (28)	15.6% (25)	6.3% (10)	23.8% (38)	3.37
Q12n. Conducting perimeter and building patrols.	23.1% (37)	20.0% (32)	27.5% (44)	17.5% (28)	11.9% (19)	3.25
Q12o. Executing access control at access points.	18.8% (30)	18.1% (29)	28.7% (46)	16.3% (26)	18.1% (29)	3.03
Q12q. Providing security awareness campaigns.	23.% (37)	15.0% (24)	21.9% (35)	17.5% (28)	22.5% (36)	2.99
Q12p. Conducting potential crime risk, and threat analysis.	26.3% (42)	13.8% (22)	15.0% (24)	17.5% (28)	27.5% (44)	2.94
Q12r. Collecting crime statistics.	20.6% (33)	13.8% (22)	16.3% (26)	15.0% (24)	34.4% (55)	2.71
Q12m. Preservation of evidence for the court.	18.2% (29)	9.4% (15)	13.8% (22)	17.6% (28)	40.9% (65)	2.47
Q12l. Investigation of serious crime.	16.4% (26)	6.3% (10)	17.0% (27)	8.2% (13)	52.2% (83)	2.26

Eleven out of 19 of the items had means above 3.5 % and the majority of the operational police officers indicating that there were to a large extent. The items are

- Writing traffic fines (88%);
- Issuing of road traffic and by-laws notices (85.3%) ;
- Observing of accidents (83%);
- Patrolling the streets (79.7%);
- Control and monitoring of road traffic flow (77%);
- Controlling of a crowd in service delivery, unrest and strike situation (73.8%);
- Arresting and detaining of a suspect (70%);
- Checking of business licenses (56%);
- Identifying crime hot spots (54.4%);
- Confiscating of hawker's goods (53.8%);
- Attending to the selling of goods without a license (52.5%); and
- Attending to noise complaints (51.2%).

Therefore, the main functions and responsibilities of MPS came out as writing traffic fines, issuing of road traffic and by-law notices, observing of accidents, patrolling streets and controlling, and monitoring of road traffic flow.

The other functions and responsibilities that were indicated as occurring to some extent were:

- Identifying crime hot spots ($M = 3.37$);
- Conducting perimeter and building patrols ($M = 3.25$);
- Executing access control at access points ($M = 3.03$);
- Providing security awareness campaigns ($M = 2.99$);
- Conducting potential crime risk, and threat analysis ($M = 2.94$);
- Collecting crime statistics ($M = 2.71$); and
- Preservation of evidence for the court ($M = 2.47$).

When further asked if investigation of serious crime was a function or responsibility of the metro police, 52.2% of operational participants indicated not to an extent at all. Therefore, MPSs seem not to investigate serious crime. The respondents were asked to indicate the roles/additional roles performed by the SAPS which they think metro police can perform for SAPS to concentrate their efforts on crime investigation and crime intelligence role effectively. The roles are shown in Table 6.10. This was a multiple response where respondents indicated more than one response.

Table 6.10: Roles/additional performed by SAPS(n=75):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Investigative of crime	22	29.30%
All minor administration duties e.g., affidavit, case filing, writing statement	18	24.00%
Crime prevention patrols	7	9.30%
More investigation into crime	6	8.00%
Identify crime hot spots	5	6.70%
Provide to do stop and search members of public when suspecting them of any crime or being in possession of illegal items.	5	6.70%
Community policing ensure effective law enforcement	5	6.70%
Domestic violence	5	6.70%
Crowd management	4	5.30%
Opening of case dockets of the accident scene where metro police came first	3	4.00%
Arrest and detain suspect in metro police holding cells	3	4.00%
Firm applications	1	1.30%

About 29.2% indicated investigation of crime as an additional role, 24% said all the minor administrative duties, e.g., affidavit, 9.35% said crime prevention patrols, 8% indicate more investigation of crime. In contrast, 6.7% indicated identification of crime hot-spots, provision to do stop and search members of the public when suspecting them of any crime or being in possession of illegal items, and community policing ensures effective law enforcement and domestic violence. The other additional roles were crowd management, opening of case dockets of the accident scene of metro police come first, arresting, and detaining suspect in metro police holding cell and firm applications.

The respondents were asked whether formal partnership between SAPS and MPS can work effectively in crime combating, reduction and prevention. About 73.5% of operational members acknowledged that the formal partnership could work while 26.5% were not in acknowledgement. Those who said the partnership would work effectively in crime combating and prevention gave the following reasons as shown in Table 6.11.

Table 6.11: Reasons for effectiveness of formal partnership (n=55):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Working together results in more power to help combat crime	29	52.70%
Formulation of structures and strategic policing plan for fighting crime	6	10.90%
Metro police and SAPS functions are similar	5	9.10%
Fighting crime	5	9.10%
More provision of optimal police resources	4	7.30%
Additional manpower	3	5.50%
Communication mode on the same police channel crime will be improved	2	3.60%
Formulation of continuous policing operational plans	1	1.80%

Help in crime data collection and analysis	1	1.80%
We can all have the necessary policing skills and equipment	1	1.80%
If all policing powers and responsibilities are equally shared between the SAPS and metro police	1	1.80%
Sharing of crime intelligence information	1	1.80%

This was a multiple response where the respondents gave more than one response. Over half, that is, 52.7% of operational level indicated that working together results in more power to help combat crime, and 10.9% said that the formal partnership can assist in formulation of policing structures and strategic planning for fighting crime. In contrast, 9.1% indicated that metro police and SAPS functions were similar, and the same proportion said partnerships will be effective since they will be fighting crime.

The other reasons that were given that formal partnership will be effective are more provision of optimal police resources, additional manpower, communication channels on the same police channel will be improved, formulation of continuous operation plans, assistance in crime data collection and analysis, the partnership can assist the police officers having the necessary policing skills and equipment, sharing of crime intelligence information and it will be effective if all the police powers and responsibilities are equally shared between SAPS and metro police.

Those who indicated that the formal partnership will not be effective gave the reasons as shown in Table 6.12.

Table 6.12: Reasons for non-effectiveness of formal partnership (n=55):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Rank structures are not the same	10	50.00%
There is clear separation of power between SAPS and metro police	6	30.00%
Metro are currently doing far more functions than SAPS	2	10.00%
Metro police still needs to establish by-laws in the community	1	5.00%
Salary must be increased	1	5.00%
Our functions as metro police are limited as compared to SAPS	1	5.00%

Half of the respondents (80) who indicated that the formal partnership would not work said that it was mainly that the rank structures were not the same and about 30% gave the reason that there is a clear separation of power between SAPS and metro police. The other reasons given for the formal partnership not working were that metro police are currently doing far more functions than SAPS, metro police still need to establish by-laws in the community, salary must be increased and other functions as metro police are limited as compared to SAPS.

The other reason mentioned were that SAPS perceived themselves as above metro police in policing status so partnering with them will be a waste. On the other hand, metro police believed SAPS are jealous to them because they are well paid while SAPS are underpaid. Some pocket of SAPS members still saw metro police as traffic officers not police officers.

Objective: To identify required resources and training that could effectively assist metro police officers in performing crime prevention role in Gauteng Province.

6.6 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON CRIME PREVENTION TRAINING AND DURATION

The respondents were asked to identify required resources and training that could effectively assist metro police officers in performing crime prevention role in Gauteng Province. The issues were measured using 5-point Likert scale, nominal scales and open-ended questions as previously mentioned. The issues are presented in the next subsections.

6.6.1 Descriptive statistics on crime prevention duration

The respondents were given twenty-one training courses and were asked to indicate the duration of the training courses as tabulated in Table 6.13.

Table 6.13: Descriptive statistics on crime prevention duration:

Statement	Duration						Mean
	0 – 5 days	Every month	2 – 3 months	4 - 6 months	6 – 12 months	Over a year	
Q15t. Computer training course.	74.3% (113)	4.6% (7)	6.6% (10)	3.3% (5)	3.3% (5)	7.9% (12)	.80
Q15i. Drugs and Nicotine combating training.	69.3% (106)	4.6% (7)	7.2% (11)	6.5% (10)	2.6% (4)	9.8% (15)	.98
Q15u. Anti-corruption course.	66.2% (100)	8.6% (13)	4.6% (7)	6.6% (10)	2.0% (3)	11.9% (18)	1.05

Statement	Duration						Mean
	0 – 5 days	Every month	2 – 3 months	4 – 6 months	6 – 12 months	Over a year	
Q15p. Report writing training.	60.3% (94)	5.8% (9)	12.2% (19)	7.7% (12)	2.6% (4)	11.5% (18)	1.21
Q15h. Tactical defence training.	57.3% (86)	8.0% (12)	8.7% (13)	9.3% (14)	4.0% (6)	12.7% (19)	1.33
Q15g. Docket training.	56.3% (89)	3.8% (6)	15.8% (25)	8.9% (14)	4.4% (7)	10.8% (17)	1.34
Q15l. Domestic violence training.	58.6% (89)	5.3% (8)	8.6% (13)	8.6% (13)	7.2% (11)	11.8% (18)	1.36
Q15q. Accident attendance training.	48.7% (76)	13.5% (21)	7.7% (12)	8.3% (13)	7.7% (12)	14.1% (22)	1.55
Q15n. Stop and search training.	48.7% (76)	6.4% (10)	12.8% (20)	10.9% (17)	9.6% (15)	11.5% (18)	1.61
Q15m. Motor vehicle systematic training.	50.3% (78)	6.5% (10)	7.7% (12)	13.5% (21)	9.7% (15)	12.3% (19)	1.63
Q15r. Police procedures and standards training.	45.5% (71)	5.8% (9)	16.7% (26)	12.8% (20)	5.8% (9)	13.5% (21)	1.68
Q15b. Duty point training.	40.5% (64)	8.2% (13)	15.2% (24)	10.8% (17)	12.7% (20)	12.7% (20)	1.85
Q15e. By-laws enforcement training.	42.1% (64)	6.6% (10)	8.6% (13)	17.8% (27)	9.2% (14)	15.8% (24)	1.93
Q15f. Visible policing training.	34.4% (53)	4.5% (7)	10.4% (16)	20.8% (32)	14.9% (23)	14.9% (23)	2.22

Statement	Duration						Mean
	0 – 5 days	Every month	2 – 3 months	4 – 6 months	6 – 12 months	Over a year	
Q15c. Crime prevention training.	36.3% (57)	2.5% (4)	8.9% (14)	16.6% (26)	19.1% (30)	16.6% (26)	2.29
Q15j. Aarto training.	33.3% (52)	6.4% (10)	13.5% (21)	13.5% (21)	10.3% (16)	23.1% (36)	2.30
Q15d. Firearms training.	34.2% (54)	2.5% (4)	10.1% (16)	8.2% (13)	14.6% (23)	30.4% (48)	2.58
Q15o. Traffic offence control training.	24.4% (38)	5.1% (8)	9.0% (14)	21.2% (33)	10.3% (16)	30.1% (47)	2.78
Q15k. Road policing training.	18.8% (28)	7.4% (11)	9.4% (14)	19.5% (29)	14.8% (22)	30.2% (45)	2.95
Q15s. National road traffic regulation training.	15.3% (24)	3.2% (5)	5.7% (9)	19.7% (31)	18.5% (29)	37.6% (59)	3.36
Q15a. National Road Traffic Signs training.	1.3% (2)	.6% (1)	5.2% (8)	14.8% (23)	32.9% (51)	45.2% (70)	4.13

Most of the respondents indicated that the following courses have a duration of five days in terms of training:

- Computer training course (74.3%);
- Drugs and Nicotine combating training (69.3%);
- Anti-corruption course (66.2%);
- Report writing training (60.3%);
- Domestic violence training (58.6%);
- Tactical defence training (57.3%);
- Docket training (56.3%); and

- Motor vehicle systematic training (50.3%).

However close to 50%, indicated that accident attendance training (48.7%), stop and search training (48.7%) and police procedures and standards training (45.5%) take within five days in terms of training. Regarding duty point training, about 40.5% of the respondents indicated that the training occurs within five days and about 42.1% indicated that by-laws enforcement training also occurs within five days. The other courses that had a close to third of the respondent indicating that they occurred within five days were visible policing training, crime prevention training, Aarto training and firearm training.

Close to 30% indicated that the training on firearm training, traffic offense control training and road policing training take over a year. The respondents also indicated that the training that take six months to a year were firearm training (14.6%), traffic offence control training (10.3%) and road policing training (14.8%). About 37.6% indicated that national road traffic regulation training takes over a year while 18.5% indicated that it takes six months to a year. It can be noted that most of the respondents suggested that national road traffic signs trainings take at least 6-12 months in training.

The respondents were asked if the level of metro police training was effective and adequate to enable one to combat crime effectively and close to 50% that is, 50.9% agreed while 49.1% disagreed. Those who agreed that the level of metro police training was effective and adequate to enable one to combat crime effectively gave the reasons of why they say so which are tabulated in Table 6.14.

Table 6.14: Reasons for effectiveness and adequacy of metro police training (n=36):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Manage to learn a lot of general crime combating from police training	9	25.00%
Issue a traffic fine for every traffic violation	7	19.40%
Functions performed by metro police are those that they are trained for traffic and by-laws	6	16.70%
Metro police officials received the SAPS and metro training courses	5	13.90%
We can do everything that SAPS can do	3	8.30%
Need further training and education on crime prevention	3	8.30%
Training must be done on regular basis	3	8.30%
Able to do arrests	1	2.80%
Can detain and conclude stop and search	1	2.80%

This was a multiple response question where respondents gave more than one reason. About a quarter of the respondents indicated that they managed to learn a lot from police training, 19.4% said issuing a traffic fine for every traffic violation, 16.7% indicated that functions performed by metro police are those that they are trained for and 13.9% said that metro police officials received the SAPS and metro training courses. The other reasons given were that they can do everything that SAPS can do. However, they need further crime prevention training as their training was not effective nor adequate to enable one to combat crime effectively gave the following reasons as tabulated in Table 6.15.

Table 6.15: Reasons for non-effectiveness and adequacy of metro police training (n=46):

Item	Frequency	Percent
The training was focused on traffic regulation not crime prevention	20	43.5%
It was based and originated from the previous traffic structure of NRTA	8	17.4%
The duration of the training is not enough for one to be able to do that effectively	6	13%
No police tactics and skills given at college	5	10.9%
The respondents who indicated that the level of metro police who have some skills and tactics they learned in the police field	2	4.3%
We do not do refresher courses regularly which means one tend to forget something	2	4.3%
Poor administration from the department	2	4.3%
Police procedures and standards training	1	2.2%

Education, crime prevention, reduction and combating training must be done on a regular basis, able to do arrests and can detain a suspect for any crime and conclude stop and search. About 43.5% indicated that the training was neither effective nor adequate since the training was focused on traffic regulation not crime prevention, 17.4% said it was based and originated from the previous traffic structure of NRTA, 13% reasoned that the duration of the training is not enough for one to be able to do that effectively and 10.9% indicated that there were no tactics and skills given at college.

The other reasons for the training not to be effective nor adequate were that some of the skills and tactics are learned in the field, they do not do refresher courses regularly which means one tends to forget something. There is poor

administration and management for the department and their policing procedures and standards of training are low. The other reason mentioned was that basic police training was provided by unqualified and inexperienced instructors.

6.6.2 Descriptive statistics on crime prevention training

The respondents were also asked the extent to which the training was conducted in their unit and the information is presented in Table 6.16.

Table 6.16: Descriptive statistics on crime prevention training:

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q17d. Firearm and ammunition training.	26.3% (42)	13.1% (21)	18.1% (29)	13.8% (22)	28.7% (46)	2.94
Q17r. Visible policing training.	18.2% (29)	14.5% (23)	20.1% (32)	11.3% (18)	35.8% (57)	2.68
Q17e. Municipal by-laws enforcement training.	15.2% (24)	19.6% (31)	14.6% (23)	12.0% (19)	38.6% (61)	2.61
Q17p. Radio Procedure training.	15.7% (25)	11.3% (18)	15.1% (24)	16.4% (26)	41.5% (66)	2.43
Q17n. Stop and search training.	12.6% (20)	14.5% (23)	15.1% (24)	14.5% (23)	43.4% (69)	2.38
Q17g. Riot and crowd control training.	17.7% (28)	10.1% (16)	12.7% (20)	10.8% (17)	48.7% (77)	2.37
Q17b. Crime prevention training.	12.7% (20)	11.4% (18)	17.1% (27)	14.6% (23)	44.3% (70)	2.34

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not any extent at all	
Q17k. Dockets training.	8.2% (13)	8.2% (13)	20.9% (33)	10.8% (17)	51.9% (82)	2.1
Q17m. Social crime prevention training.	7.5% (12)	6.9% (11)	23.3% (37)	9.4% (15)	52.8% (84)	2.07
Q17t. Training on attacks on police officers.	7.5% (12)	11.9% (19)	13.1% (21)	11.9% (19)	55.6% (89)	2.04
Q17j. Police tactical respond training.	11.9% (19)	4.4% (7)	12.6% (20)	15.7% (25)	55.3% (88)	2.02
Q17o. Dangerous Weapons training.	10.1% (16)	6.3% (10)	10.1% (16)	17.1% (27)	56.3% (89)	1.97
Q17h. Police defensive technique training.	6.3% (10)	5.0% (8)	16.4% (26)	15.7% (25)	56.6% (90)	1.89
Q17f. High speed chase vehicle training.	5.1% (8)	8.9% (14)	10.8% (17)	10.2% (16)	65.0% (102)	1.79
Q17i. Drug and Nicotine identification training.	6.9% (11)	6.3% (10)	10.7% (17)	8.2% (13)	67.9% (108)	1.76
Q17c. Drug and Nicotine combating training.	5.8% (9)	6.4% (10)	7.1% (11)	14.1% (22)	66.7% (104)	1.71
Q17s. Assets identification training.	6.3% (10)	1.9% (3)	14.6% (23)	9.5% (15)	67.7% (107)	1.70
Q17u. Anti-corruption course.	6.3% (10)	3.1% (5)	12.5% (20)	10.0% (15)	68.1% (107)	1.69

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q17q. Crime intelligence training.	(10)	(5)	(20)	(16)	(109)	1.58
	5.0%	2.5%	11.9%	6.9%	73.6%	
Q17l. Police tracing and profiling training.	(8)	(4)	(19)	(11)	(117)	1.53
	3.8%	1.9%	10.1%	11.4%	72.8%	
Q17a. Rail and port crime prevention training.	(5)	-	(6)	(13)	(134)	1.28
	3.2%	-	3.8%	8.2%	84.8%	

No training was conducted in any unit to a large extent. The training that was conducted to some extent were firearm and ammunition training with a mean of 2.98, visible policing training with a mean of 2.68 and municipal by-laws enforcement training with a mean of 2.61.

Over 40% indicated that the training that were not been done at all are radio procedure training (41.5%), stop and search training (43.4%) and crime prevention training (44.3%). Close to 50%, that is 48.7% indicated that riot and crowd control training were not being done to any extent.

Most of the respondents indicated that the following courses were not being done to any extent at all.

- Crime intelligence training (73.6%);
- Anti-corruption course (68.1%);
- Assets identification training (67.7%);

- Drugs and Nicotine combating training (66.7%);
- High speed chase vehicle training (65.0%);
- Police defensive technique training (56.6%);
- Dangerous Weapons training (56.3%);
- Training on attacks on police officers (55.6%);
- Police tactical response training (55.3%);
- Social crime prevention training (52.8%); and
- Dockets training (51.9%).

The results indicate that investigation of crime, crime intelligence training, anti-corruption course and assets identification training are the training that are not being done.

About 42.1% of the respondents on operational level believed the metro police training is of acceptable standards and that it enables the metro police officers to prevent crime effectively while 57.9% were not in agreement. Those in agreement gave the following reasons in Table 6.17.

Table 6.17: Reasons for training of metro police in acceptable standards (n=30):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Offer all metro police training	10	33.30%
Visibility of most police officers helps in combating crime	4	13.30%
Many of the officers coming out of training handle themselves	4	13.30%
It is acceptable after it was controlled under the RTMC	3	10.00%
The instructors are qualified and know their job	3	10.00%
Others did SAPS training	2	6.70%
Basics can be useful if applied correctly	2	6.70%
Visible policing training	2	6.70%
Trained duration has been extended	1	3.30%

This was a multiple response question. A third of the respondent indicated that they should offer all metro police training, 13.3% of operational members indicated visibility of most police officers helps in combating crime, the same proportion also indicated that many of the officers coming out of training handle themselves, 10% indicated that it is acceptable after it was controlled under the RTMC and the same proportion indicated that the instructors are qualified and know their job. The other reasons given were that others did SAPS training, basics can be useful if applied correctly, visible policing training and trained duration has been extended.

The reasons given for non-training of metro police in acceptable standards were shown in Table 6.18.

Table 6.18: Reasons for non-training of metro police in acceptable standards (n=44):

Item	Frequency	Percent
Only focus on road policing or road traffic legislation	18	40.9%
Crime prevention training	8	18.2%
The training standard is low provided by unqualified trainers/instructors	8	18.2%
Training needs to be on a regular basis	7	15.9%
MPD uses outdated training materials	2	4.5%
Metro police fear to execute their duties and they seem to have no confidence	1	2.3%

About 40.9% gave the reason as that only focus on road policing or road traffic legislation, 18.2% said crime prevention training, the same proportion said the training standard is low provided by unqualified trainers and 15.9% said training needs to be regularly. The other reasons given for training not of acceptable standards was that MPS utilise outdated training materials and that metro police fear to execute their duties and they seem to have no confidence.

The respondents were asked to indicate what would be the acceptable level of training required by the metro police officers in preventing criminal activity in support of the other law enforcement agencies. The information is shown in Table 6.19. This was a multiple response question.

Table 6.19: Acceptable level of training requirements for metro police officers (n=72):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
They incorporated training of RTMC and SAPS	18	25.00%
Get qualified trainers to give good training theory and practicals	11	15.30%
Metro police should have the same level of training expertise as SAPS	9	12.50%
More tactical training like house penetration	8	11.10%
Training in crime prevention	8	11.10%
Level four training since they do not investigate crime	4	5.60%
Firearm and ammunition training	3	4.20%
Radio procedure training	3	4.20%
Police tracing and profiling training	3	4.20%
The combination of SAPS and NRTA will be beneficial at most	3	4.20%
Tactical defence training	3	4.20%

About 25% indicated that they should incorporate training of RTMC and SAPS, 15.3% indicated to get qualified trainers to give good training theory and practical, 12.5% said metro police should have the same level of training expertise as SAPS, 11.1% were of the opinion that they should do more police tactical training like house penetration and the same proportion said that they need police training in crime prevention.

The other acceptance level of training standards suggested were that they should do level four training since they do not investigate crime, firearm and ammunition

training, radio procedure training, police tracing and profiling training, the combination of SAPS and NRTA will be beneficial at most and tactical defence training.

6.6.3 Descriptive statistics on resources

The respondents were asked to indicate the resources in the MPDs that can enable them to combat and prevent crime effectively in South Africa. The resources are shown in Table 6.20.

Table 6.20: Descriptive statistics on resources:

Statement	Level of acknowledgement	
	Yes	No
Q20b1. Vehicles	90.0% (144)	10.0% (16)
Q20k1. Police vehicles with advanced camera system	84.4% (135)	15.6% (25)
Q20m1. Advanced computer technology system	80.0% (128)	20.0% (32)
Q20l1. Uniform	76.3% (122)	23.8% (38)
Q20a1. Specialised trained crime detectors	73.1% (117)	26.9% (43)
Q20c1. Advanced radio devices	70.0% (112)	30.0% (48)
Q20d1. Advanced bullet resistant vests.	65.0%	35.0%

	(104)	(56)
Q20f1. Handcuffs and batons	64.4%	35.6%
	(103)	(57)
Q20n1. Special metal detector scanners	64.4%	35.6%
	(103)	(57)
Q20h1. Additional workforce	56.9%	43.1%
	(91)	(69)
Q20i1. Budget allocations	56.9%	43.1%
	(91)	(69)
Q20e1. Office space	56.3%	43.8%
	(90)	(70)
Q20g1. Additional workforce	50.6%	49.4%
	(81)	(79)
Q20j1. Enough body shields	48.1%	51.9%
	(77)	(83)

A larger proportion, that is, 90% of respondents indicated that they need vehicles, 84.4% indicated police vehicles with advanced camera system, 80% said advanced computer technology system, 76.3% said uniform, 73.1% said specialised trained crime detectors and 70% said advanced radio devices. This shows that the resources greatly needed by the police to combat crime effectively are vehicles, police vehicles with advanced camera system and advanced computer technology system.

The other resources mentioned by most of the respondents were advanced bullet resistant vests (65%), handcuffs and batons (64.4%), special metal detector scanners (64.4%), additional workforce (56.9%), budget allocations (56.9%),

office space (56.3%) and additional workforce (50.6%). However, close to half, that is, 48.1% mentioned enough body shields as one of the resources needed.

6.6.4 Descriptive statistics on specialised services

The respondents were asked to indicate the specialised services in the MPDs that can enable them to combat and prevent crime effectively in South Africa and the information is shown in Table 6.21.

Table 6.21: Descriptive statistics on specialised services:

Statement	Level of acknowledgement	
	Yes	No
Q20j2. Stolen vehicle unit	80% (128)	20.0% (32)
Q20m2. Crime intelligence unit	74.4% (119)	25.6% (41)
Q20l2. Municipal property hijacking unit	68.8% (110)	31.3% (50)
Q20i2. High chase vehicle unit	66.3% (106)	33.8% (54)
Q20k2. Murder and robbery unit	64.4% (103)	35.6% (57)
Q20e2. Visible policing unit	63.1% (101)	36.9% (59)
Q20f2. Highway patrol unit	62.5% (100)	37.5% (60)

Q20n2. Social crime prevention unit	60.0% (96)	40.0% (64)
Q20b2. Drug and Nicotine combating unit	56.9% (91)	43.1% (69)
Q20a2. Riot and crowd control division	55.6% (89)	44.4% (71)
Q20c2. By-law enforcement unit	53.8% (86)	46.3% (74)
Q20d2. Rail and port prevention division	52.5% (84)	47.5% (76)
Q20h2. Crime prevention through environmental design unit	50.6% (81)	49.4% (79)
Q20g2. Municipal security patrol unit	46.3% (74)	53.8% (86)

A larger proportion, that is, 80% of the respondents indicated Stolen Vehicle Unit, 74.4% said Crime Intelligence Unit, 68.8% said Municipal Property Hijacking Unit, 66.3% indicated High Chase Vehicle Unit, 64.4% said Murder And Robbery Unit and 63.1% said Visible Policing Unit. The results indicated that the most specialised services needed are Stolen Vehicle Unit and Crime Intelligent Unit.

The other specialised unit needed were Highway Patrol Unit (62.5%), Social Crime Prevention Unit (60%), Drug and Nicotine Combating Unit (56.9%), Riot and Crowd Control Division (55.6%), By-Law Enforcement Unit (53.8%), Rail and Port Prevention Division (52.5%) and CPTED Unit (50.6%). However, 46.3% indicated the Municipal Security Patrol Unit as a specialised service needed to be able to patrol, deploy metro police members to protect and safeguard municipal assets.

Objective: To investigate powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in crime combating

6.7 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON ADDITIONAL POWERS AND FUNCTIONS FOR METRO POLICE OFFICERS

The respondents were asked to indicate powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in combating crime. The issues were measured using a 5-point Likert scale, nominal scales and open-ended questions. The Likert scale ranged from 1 (strongly disagreed) to 5 (strongly agreed). The issues are presented in the next subsections.

6.7.1 Descriptive statistics on additional powers

The respondents were asked to indicate the additional powers the metro police should be given to help SAPS to prevent crime in the community. The information is depicted in Table 6.22.

Table 6.22: Descriptive statistics on additional powers:

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To a very large extent	To a large extent	To a some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q21k. Powers to be independent from political interference and influence.	71.2% (99)	12.2% (17)	9.4% (13)	2.2% (3)	5.0% (7)	4.42
Q21a. Powers to do stop and search on members of the public when suspecting them to be in possession of any unauthorised goods and items suspected to have been stolen or used in suspected crime.	72.5% (116)	13.1% (21)	5.6% (9)	.6% (1)	8.1% (13)	4.41
Q21b. Powers of arrest with warrant.	61.3% (98)	20.0% (32)	10.0% (16)	1.3% (2)	7.5% (12)	4.26
Q21c. Powers to arrest without warrant on any offence committed under any crime schedule.	65.0% (104)	16.3% (26)	7.5% (12)	1.9% (3)	9.4% (15)	4.26
Q21h. Powers to be able to formulate drug and narcotic crime prevention unit.	58.1% (90)	23.2% (36)	10.3% (16)	3.2% (5)	5.2% (8)	4.26
Q21i. Powers to administer motor vehicle accidents within the municipality for purpose of statistics.	60.4% (93)	18.8% (29)	10.4% (16)	3.2% (5)	7.1% (11)	4.22
Q21j. Powers of conducting security risk assessment and crime statistic.	54.5% (85)	21.2% (33)	8.3% (13)	6.4% (10)	9.6% (15)	4.04

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To a very large extent	To a large extent	To a some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q21d. To be given powers to investigate crimes committed in their juristic area.	49.7% (79)	25.2% (40)	10.1% (16)	7.5% (12)	7.5% (12)	4.02
Q21g. Powers to establish crime intelligence unit.	43.8% (67)	28.8% (44)	14.4% (22)	4.6% (7)	8.5% (13)	3.95
Q21e. To be given powers to preserve/store evidence recovered at the scene of crime.	42.3% (66)	21.2% (33)	19.2% (30)	7.7% (12)	9.6% (15)	3.79
Q21f. Powers to conduct crime prevention operations without getting authority from police minister.	44.9% (70)	16.7% (26)	19.2% (30)	7.7% (12)	11.5% (18)	3.76

About 83.3% agreed that they should be given powers to be independent from political interference and influence with a mean of 4.42 and 85.6% agreed that they should be given powers to do stop and search on members of the public when suspecting them to be in possession of any unauthorised goods and items suspected to have been stolen or used in suspected crime with a mean of 4.41 and about 81.3% agreed that they should be given powers of arrest with warrant with a mean of 4.26.

The same mean of 4.26 and the proportion of 81.3% was also observed in that they should be given powers to arrest without warrant on any offence committed under any crime schedule and the powers to be able to formulate drug and narcotic crime prevention unit.

The other powers indicated by most of the people that they need were:

- Powers to administer motor vehicle accidents within the municipality for purpose of statistics (79.2%);
- Powers of conducting security risk assessment and crime statistics (75.7%);
- To be given powers to investigate crimes committed in their juristic area (74.9%);
- Powers to establish crime intelligence unit (72.6%);
- To be given powers to preserve/store evidence recovered at the scene of crime (63.5%);
- Powers to conduct crime prevention operations without getting authority from police minister (61.6%); and
- It can be noted that the metro police would like to have the same powers as SAPS to be able to be combatting crime.

The respondents were asked how SAPS perceives / understands the role of metro police officers in preventing crime. The perceptions are shown in Table 6.23.

Table 6.23: SAPS perception / understanding of role of metro police (n=72):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
As traffic officers / cops who control traffic	49	68.10%
Effectiveness in doing by-laws as well as traffic function	11	15.30%
Issue infringements notices	5	6.90%
Most of the units members and seniors do have a clue about the topic except crime prevention units within SAPS	5	6.90%
Known for traffic violation	4	5.60%

Issue traffic fines	3	4.20%
Do not investigate crime	1	1.40%
No skills about the resources they should have on crime prevention	1	1.40%

This was a multiple response question. About 49% said they perceive or understand the role of metro police as traffic officers / cops who control traffic and 15.3% indicated as effective in doing by-laws and traffic functions. The other roles mentioned were issuing infringements notices, known for traffic violation, issuing traffic fines, do not investigate crime and that they do not have skills about the resources they should have on crime prevention. However, others made a statement that most of the units members and seniors do have a clue about the topic except crime prevention units within SAPS.

Objective: To investigate the effectiveness of the laws regulating the MPD in South Africa and determine the shortcomings relating to MPS in combating and preventing crime.

6.8 DESCRIPTIVE STATISTICS ON LEGISLATION AND EFFECTIVE CRIME COMBATING AND PREVENTION

The respondents were asked on issues concerning the effectiveness of the laws regulating the MPD in South Africa and determining the shortcomings relating to MPSs in combating and preventing crime. The issues were measured using a 5-point Likert scale, nominal scales, and open-ended questions. The issues are presented in the next subsections.

6.8.1 Descriptive statistics on legislation

About 73% indicated that they have clear knowledge of the contents of the Act (SAPS Act No 68 of 1995 and SAPS Amendment Act No 83 of 1998) which regulate the metro police in South Africa while 27% do not have clear knowledge.

The respondents were asked that if they agree, what in their opinion are the legal failures for the metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. The information is shown in Table 6.24.

Table 6.24: Legal failures for the metro police officers (n=30):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Metro police do not have enough power to do their crime prevention functions properly	11	36.70%
Metro police are not well informed about prevention, combating and reducing crime	8	26.70%
Lack resources like fast cars	2	6.70%
Lack resources like rifles	2	6.70%
Not assuming roles as police officers	2	6.70%
Neglect their own roles from the ascribed basic function	2	6.70%
Restrictions / lack of powers	2	6.70%
To ensure that metro police is not controlled by municipal manager and mayor	2	6.70%
Provision of optimal police resources	2	6.70%

This was a multiple response question. About 36.7% said one of the failures is metro police do not have enough power to do their crime prevention functions

properly, and 26.7% said that metro police are not well informed about prevention, combating and reducing crime.

The other failures indicated were lack of resources like fast cars and rifles, not assuming roles as police officers, neglecting their own roles from the ascribed basic function, restrictions / lack of powers, to ensure that metro police are not controlled by municipal manager and mayor and provision and allocation of optimal police resources.

6.8.2 Descriptive statistics on crime combating and prevention

About 60.1% indicated that SAPS are not effective in crime prevention while 39.9% indicated that they are effective. Those who said they were effective gave the following justification in Table 6.25, indicating why they say so.

Table 6.25: Reasons for effectiveness in crime prevention (n=27):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
High priority crimes are given necessary attention	8	29.60%
Prison cells are overcrowded due to effective police work	4	14.80%
Arrest a suspect	3	11.10%
Gather evidence	3	11.10%
Focus on crime not on road policing	3	11.10%
Statistics show that some crimes rate has reduced	3	11.10%
They are well positioned and have resources at their disposal	3	11.10%
Ensure that conviction is secured in court	2	7.40%

They are able to control certain crimes	2	7.40%
They are visible on our street patrolling	1	3.70%

This was a multiple response question, and about 29.6% indicated that high priority crimes are given the necessary attention and 14.8% said that prison cells are overcrowded owing to effective police work. The other justifications given were arresting a suspect, gathering evidence, focusing on crime not on road policing, statistics showing that some crimes rate has reduced, are well positioned and have resources at their disposal, ensuring that conviction is secured in the court's ability to control certain crimes and visibility on street patrolling.

Those who said that the South African police are not effective in crime prevention, gave the following reasons in Table 6.26.

Table 6.26: Reasons for non-effectiveness in crime prevention (n=31):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
They are not effective because of high crime rate	8	25.80%
Lack of necessary and optimal police resources	4	12.90%
Need additional workforce	4	12.90%
They are relaxed in terms of responding to crime scene	3	9.70%
Suspects are sometimes not arrested and justice is not done	3	9.70%
They are not interested in police planning process and control	3	9.70%
They are corrupt and full of nepotism	2	6.50%

Murder and violence rates are out of control	2	6.50%
South Africa has more human rights than any other country	1	3.20%
Corruption is rife in their work	1	3.20%
They must be well trained and well equipped	1	3.20%

About 25.8% operational members indicated that they are not effective because of high crime rate 12.9% gave the ineffectiveness owing to lack of necessary and optimal police resources and need for additional personnel.

The other reasons given were that they are relaxed in terms of responding to crime scenes. Suspects are sometimes not arrested, and justice is not done, are not interested in planning process and control, are corrupt and full of nepotism, murder and violence rates are out of control. South Africa has more human rights than any other country, corruption is rife in their work and they be well trained and well equipped.

The respondents were asked to indicate the improvements that would be needed for crime prevention role within metro police and the following improvements in Table 6.27 were tabulated.

Table 6.27: Reasons for improvements of crime prevention role (n=39):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Need investigation of crime role	7	17.90%
Doing their best on limited resources	6	15.40%
Tactical training	6	15.40%
To establish crime intelligence unit	4	10.30%
Crime prevention	4	10.30%
Conduct workshop in educating the public on how the metro police works	3	7.70%
Anti-corruption courses	3	7.70%
Additional manpower	3	7.70%
Visible policing	3	7.70%
Interpersonal skills	2	5.10%
In rural areas where people think or take laws in their own hands	1	2.60%
With the approach of "broken window theory" every crime treated as seriously as possible	1	2.60%

This was a multiple response question. About 17.9% of operational members indicated the need for investigation of crime role as an improvement, 15.4% said doing their best on limited resources, 15.4% also mentioned tactical training, 10.3% mentioned establishing crime intelligence unit and the same proportion mentioned crime prevention. The other improvements given were conducting policing workshops in educating the public on how the metro police works, anti-corruption courses, additional personnel, visible policing, interpersonal skills, improvement in rural areas where people think or take laws in their own hands and use of the approach of "broken window theory" every crime treated as seriously as possible.

About 35.5% indicated that the metro police were effective in preventing crime while 64.5% said that they were not. Those who said they were effective gave the following justifications in Table 6.28.

Table 6.28: Reasons for metro police effectiveness in the prevention of crime (n=11):

Item	Frequency	Percent
By performing road policing is part of crime prevention	3	27.3
Identifying crime hot spots	3	27.3
Most duties are performed accordingly	2	18.2
By apprehending suspects that committed crime	2	18.2
The members also preventing crime by being visible all the time	1	9.1

The respondents indicated that the metro police were effective because road policing is part of crime prevention, they identify crime hotspots, most duties are performed accordingly, they apprehend suspects that committed crime and that the members also prevent crime by being visible all the time. Those who indicated that they were not effective gave the reasons in Table 6.29.

Table 6.29: Reasons for metro police non-effectiveness in prevention of crime (n=43):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Metro police have adopted and are mainly focused on road policing function	10	23.30%
No necessary equipment resources	9	20.90%
Metro police are not trained in crime prevention and especially in combating crime	8	18.60%
Poor management	4	9.30%
Metro police and SAPS seem not to work together	3	7.00%
Metro police clue less about combating crime	3	7.00%
They do not have mandate to control crime in terms of regulation	3	7.00%
They are limited in their power and it affects their duties	2	4.70%
More tactical training	1	2.30%
There are some officers who take bribes from criminals	1	2.30%
It is not our functions we only support SAPS	1	2.30%
Neglect by-law policing and crime prevention function	1	2.30%
Their department lack resources and proper management to curb crime	1	2.30%

This was a multiple response question. About 23.30% of operational members indicated that they were not effective because metro police have adopted and are mainly focused on road policing function, 20.9% said no necessary

equipment resources, 18.6% indicated that metro police have adopted and are mainly focused on road policing function and 9.3% indicated poor management.

The other reasons given for their ineffectiveness were that metro police and SAPS seem not to work together, metro police clue less about combating crime, they do not have a mandate to control crime in terms of regulation, they are limited in their power and it affects their duties, they need more police tactical training and some officers who take bribes from criminals. About 62.1% of the respondents believe that it is ideal for metro police to have only one minister like SAPS. Metro police have two ministers to report and take instruction Minister of Transport and the Minister of Police while 37.9% indicated that it was not ideal. The beneficial reasons given by those who said it was ideal to report to Minister of Police alone are given in Table 6.30.

Table 6.30: Reasons for working under same minister (n=31):

Item	Frequency	Percent
Most SAPS functions are same as of metro police	10	32.3%
For better management and control	6	19.4%
We are also appointed under one SAPS Act	5	16.1%
Focus on the same goals as not to duplicate their duties	4	12.9%
Metro police mandate is localised and derives from by-laws of the city	4	12.9%
There will be on the same page on crime computing	2	6.5%

It was a multiple response question. About 32.3% said it was ideal because most SAPS functions are same as of metro police, 19.4% said for better management and control 16.1% said there were appointed under one SAPS Act, 12.9% indicated that they need to focus on the same goals as not to duplicate their duties, same proportion said that metro police mandate is road traffic localised

and derives from by-laws of the city and 6.5% indicated that there will be on the same page on crime computing.

Those who indicated that they should continue reporting under the two Ministers of Transport and Police respectfully gave the following reasons in Table 6.31.

Table 6.31: Reasons for not working under same minister(n=15):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
To avoid being given many duties that might lead to lose focus on our main duties	6	40%
The rank structure is not the same	4	26.7%
Metro police and SAPS should have the same powers	4	26.7%
The powers and duties are different between the two	1	6.7%

This was a multiple response. The reasons for not falling under the same minister were to avoid being given many duties that might lead to losing focus on our main duties. The rank structure is not the same, metro police and SAPS should have the same powers and that powers and duties are different between the two. The other reason given was the duplication of functions.

The respondents were asked to outline how formal partnerships should work if they were to be established between the SAPS and the MPS. The views are given in Table 6.32.

Table 6.32: Outline for formal partnerships in practice (n=43):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
To ensure the planning on crime is done jointly especially crime prevention	11	25.60%
Role should be clearly defined	10	23.30%
Sharing of resources equitably and accordingly	8	18.60%
They will be working together, helping each other	7	16.30%
Crime will be reduced	5	11.60%
For one to help out in areas when they fail to do certain duties	4	9.30%
Partnerships will be established in fighting crime	3	7.00%
metro police could identify crime committed within the municipal territory with or without a vehicle while SAPS continue with crime intelligence and crime investigation part.	2	4.70%
If the metro police can be given the same powers as the SAPS	1	2.30%

This was a multiple response question. About a quarter, that is, 25.6% of operational members indicated that they should ensure that the planning on crime is done jointly especially crime prevention, about 23.30% said that the roles should be clearly defined, 18.6% said that sharing of resources equitably and accordingly, 16.3% said they will work together, helping each other and 11.6% said that crime will be reduced.

The other suggestions given were that one to help in areas when they fail to do certain duties, partnerships will be established in fighting crime, metro police

could identify crime committed within the municipal territory with or without a vehicle while SAPS continues with crime intelligence and crime investigation part.

About 13.5% of operational members said that the community understands the roles/functions of the metro police while a large proportion of 86.5% of operational level said that the community does not understand the roles/functions of the metro police. Those who said that the community understands the roles / functions of metro police said that they know metro police as traffic officers responsible for traffic law and by-laws. Those who said the community does not understand or know the roles or functions of the metro police gave the following reasons as shown in Table 6.33.

Table 6.33: Reasons for community not understanding the roles/functions of metro police (n=39):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
They think metro police duties is about stopping vehicles and issuing the traffic fines only	17	43.60%
Metro police officers are basically seen as traffic enforcement agencies	14	35.90%
Community does not know that metro police can open a docket	5	12.80%
Members of community call SAPS to report a crime	3	7.70%
When it comes to arresting suspects, they only think of SAPS	1	2.60%

This was a multiple response question. Those who said the community did not understand the roles/functions of metro police, about 43.6% said that they think metro police duties entail stopping vehicles and issuing the fines only, 35.90%

said that metro police officers are basically seen as traffic enforcement agencies and 12.8% said that community does not know that metro police can open a docket.

The other reason given were that members of community call SAPS to report a crime and that when it comes to arresting suspects they only think of SAPS. The other reason is that the community still perceives metro police as traffic officials responsible for traffic violations, vehicle registrations, driver’s licence and controlling traffic. When crimes such as domestic violence and abuse happened, they do not call them; they only report them to SAPS.

6.8.3 Descriptive statistics on partnership roles

The respondents were asked to what extent to which metro police do the roles of the following crime prevention programmes to assist in crime prevention and were given five roles as shown in Table 6.10.

Table 6.34: Descriptive statistics on partnership roles:

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	To a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q31e. Business against crime	20.9% (33)	22.2% (35)	20.3% (32)	22.2% (35)	14.6% (23)	3.13
Q31b. Community safety initiatives	16.5% (26)	17.7% (28)	25.9% (41)	23.4% (37)	16.5% (26)	2.94
Q31a. Community policing forum.	20.1% (32)	14.5% (23)	20.1% (32)	27.7% (44)	17.6% (28)	2.92

Statement	Level of extent					Mean
	To very large extent	a large extent	To some extent	a small extent	Not to any extent at all	
Q31d. Sector policing initiatives	13.3% (21)	24.7% (39)	19.6% (31)	20.3% (32)	22.2% (35)	2.87
Q31c. Security cluster forum	11.9% (19)	23.3% (37)	18.2% (29)	28.3% (45)	18.2% (29)	2.82

All means were close to three indicating that overall the roles can assist in crime prevention to some extent. About 43.1% indicated that business against crime was assisting crime prevention to a large extent while 36.8% indicated that it was to a small extent or not at all. About 34.2% said community safety initiatives were assisting crime prevention to a large extent while 39.9% indicated that it was to a small extent or not at all.

About 34.5% indicated that community policing forum could assist crime prevention to a large extent while 45.3% said to a small extent or not at all. In terms of sector policing initiatives, 38% indicated that it assists to a large extent while 42.5% said to a small extent or not at all. About 35.3% said that security cluster forum indicated that they assist crime prevention to a large extent while 46.5% said to a small extent or not at all.

6.8.4 Descriptive statistics on additional roles

The respondents were asked to indicate additional roles that can be done in the crime prevention programmes. For the community policing forum, the additional roles are shown in Table 6.35.

Table 6.35: Community policing forum (n=49):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Community Police Forum assists police in identifying suspects	17	34.70%
Identification of crime	12	24.50%
Inform police about criminal activities taking place in the area	9	18.40%
Direct and indirect identification of crime focus areas	4	8.20%
To protect the area designated to them and report suspicious activity	4	8.20%
Discussing safety problems without plan and way forward is pointless	2	4.10%
Their roles are to strengthen police accountability effectiveness and transparency	2	4.10%
Educating the community	2	4.10%
Crime prevention	1	2.00%

This was a multiple response. About 34.7% said that Community Police Forum assists the police in identifying suspects, 24.5% indicated that in the identification of crime and 18.4% said that in informing police about criminal activities taking place in the area. The other additional roles mentioned are direct and indirect identification of crime focus areas, to protect the area designated to them and report suspicious activity, discussing safety problems without plan and way forward is pointless, their role is to strengthen police accountability effectiveness and transparency, educating the community and crime prevention.

The additional roles in community safety initiatives are shown in Table 6.36.

Table 6.36: Community safety initiatives (n=50):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Help to teach community on preventing and stopping crime around the area	19	38.00%
Community becomes involved in its own safety	17	34.00%
To improve relationship between the community and the police	5	10.00%
Measures undertaken to address issues of safety and security	5	10.00%
To educate and make awareness on crime-related activities	5	10.00%

The respondents gave more than one option. About 38% of operational level community safety initiatives indicated that help to teach community on preventing and stopping crime around the area can be an additional role, 34% said that community becomes involved in its own safety, and 10% gave the additional roles that to improve relationship between the community and the police, to undertake measures to address issues of safety and security and to educate and make awareness on crime-related activities. In terms of security cluster forum, the additional roles given are in Table 6.37.

Table 6.37: Security cluster forum (n=43):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Assist in patrolling the area	9	20.90%
Assist in keeping the community safe	9	20.90%
Resources combined for a common goal	8	18.60%

More awareness will help the community to understanding the policy	7	16.30%
Implement social crime prevention measures	4	9.30%
Fighting crime	4	9.30%
To plan on how to stop crime	3	7.00%
Combating crime as one forum	1	2.30%
Security cluster work hand in hand with metro police and SAPS to combat crime break-ins	1	2.30%

This was a multiple response question. About 20.9% of operational members said assisting in patrolling the area can be additional role in security cluster forum, 20.9% said helping in keeping the community safe, 18.6% said resources could be combined for a common goal and 16.3% said more awareness will help the community to understanding the crime profiles. The other additional roles given were implementing social crime prevention measures, fighting crime and to plan on how to stop crime.

In terms of business against crime, the additional roles mentioned to prevent crime are shown in Table 6.38. Some respondents gave more than one response.

Table 6.38: Business against crime (n= 41):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
To protect their interest and assets	10	24.40%
Businesspeople organise resources for crime prevention	9	22.00%

To protect businesses within the society from siege by criminals	8	19.50%
Help community to combat crime	7	17.10%
More patrols are needed and equipment to be able to combat crime	6	14.60%
Patrols and crime prevention visibility	2	4.90%

About 24.4% indicated protection of their interest and assets as an additional role, 22% mentioned business people to organise resources for crime prevention, 19.5% said to protect businesses within the society from siege by criminals, 17.1% said to help the community to combat crime, 14.6% said more patrols are needed and equipment to be able to combat crime and 4.9% said that patrols and crime prevention visibility can be an additional role in programmes on business fighting against crime.

The additional role for the programme on security policing initiatives fighting crime prevention are shown in Table 6.39. This was a multiple response question.

Table 6.39: Security policing initiatives (n= 32):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
More awareness needs to be done for the community to be able to understand and help the police in crime prevention	12	37.50%
Assist in gathering information about crime which is happening	11	34.40%
Visible policing and patrols	8	25.00%
Continuous police visibility	1	3.10%
Police are levelling this with lot of mediocracy	1	3.10%

About 37.5% said more awareness needs to be done for the community to be able to understand and help the police in crime prevention, 34.4% said that they should assist in gathering information about crime which is happening while 25% said that visible policing and patrols. The other roles mentioned are that continuous police visibility and police are levelling this with lot of mediocrity. In terms of private security industry, the additional roles for crime prevention are shown in Table 6.40.

Table 6.40: Private security industry (n=43):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Protecting private and public properties	13	30.20%
Guarding and patrolling to prevent crime	8	18.60%
Helps to combat crime	6	14.00%
Assisting with access control and patrolling the area	5	11.60%
Improve surveillance through schemes such as car guards	4	9.30%
They need to be incorporated and help the police	4	9.30%
Monitoring alarms and dispatching of security personnel when alarm triggers	2	4.70%
Inform police of any crime at their working environment	2	4.70%
It is effective if they observe laws and regulations	1	2.30%

Some respondents gave more than one option. About 30.2% said that protecting private and public properties can be an additional role, 18.6% said that guarding and patrolling prevent crime as a role, 14% said it helps combat crime while 11.6% said that improving surveillance through schemes such as car guards. The other additional roles mentioned were they need to be incorporated and help the police, monitoring alarms and dispatching of security personnel when alarm triggers, informing police of any crime at their working environment, and effective if they observe laws and regulations. The respondents were asked to give any additional comments and the comments are shown in Table 6.41.

Table 6.41: Any other comments (n=26):

Item	Frequency	Percent of cases
Metro police and SAPS should be integrated as to make metro policing effective service that is community based	8	30.80%
To simplify the work of police society they must be educated about the laws of the republic	5	19.20%
Policing structure should be less politicised	4	15.40%
Professionals to reach common goal which is enforcing the laws of this country guided by the oath of office	4	15.40%
Metro police should stop focusing on politicians too much	3	11.50%
There is need to stop corruption	3	11.50%
SAPS and metro police to work together by combining their control room	2	7.70%
Community Policing Forum	2	7.70%
Metro police should become an independent police department with its own police cells, court system and investigative powers	2	7.70%
Poor remuneration	2	7.70%
Metro police should be compelled to open a case docket on an accident scene	1	3.80%
Fighting crime like other role players e.g., saturation unit	1	3.80%
More police training must be done on regular basis	1	3.80%

About 30.8% of respondents said that metro police and SAPS should be integrated to make metro policing effective, a service that is community based and 19.2% indicated to simplify the work of police, society must be educated about the laws of the republic. The other issues raised were metro policing structure should be less politicised, professionals to reach common goal which is enforcing the laws of this country guided by the oath of office, metro police should stop focusing on politicians too much.

More importantly, there is need to stop corruption, SAPS and metro police to work together by combining their control room and community police forum. Furthermore, it was suggested that metro police should become an independent police department with its own police cells court system and investigative powers, poor remuneration, metro police should be compelled to open a case docket on an accident scene, metro police should be fighting crime like other role players e.g., saturation unit and more training must be done on a regular basis.

6.9 ASSESSING VALIDITY USING EXPLORATORY FACTOR ANALYSIS

The validity of the instrument was assessed using exploratory factor analysis using the principal component method with a varimax rotation. Exploratory factor analysis was used to determine which variables go together by having highly correlated variables being grouped together so that patterns can be easily interpreted and understood. Furthermore, the factor analysis was done on the Likert scale questions and the number of factors were determined using the latent root criterion. The latent root criterion as mentioned in methodology is one of the stopping rules to determine how many factors to retain in the analysis and in this case, all factors with eigenvalues (latent roots) greater than one were retained, that is, they were considered significant (Hair et al. 2019; Tabachnick & Fidell, 2014).

The Kaiser-Meyer-Olkin (KMO) measure of sampling adequacy and the Bartlett's test of sphericity were used to determine the adequacy or appropriateness of the

factor solution. A KMO of more than .5 for either the entire matrix or an individual variable indicated the appropriateness for performing factor analysis on the overall set of variables or specific variables respectively and a significant Bartlett test of sphericity (p-value less than .05) indicates that sufficient correlations exist among the variables to proceed with factor analysis (Hair et al. 2019). The robustness of the factor analysis was determined by having the factors explaining usually 60% or higher (Hair et al. 2019).

The factor analysis was done on seven constructs which are

- Barriers / obstacles
- Solutions
- Roles
- Crime prevention duration
- Crime prevention training
- Additional powers and functions for metro police officers
- Partnership roles.

A KMO of .654 was obtained which is above .5 and therefore, the correlations were adequate for factor analysis. The Bartlett's test for sphericity resulted in a chi-square of 8258.455 with a p-value of less than .001 leading to the rejection of the null hypothesis of lack of sufficient correlation between variables and one can conclude that there were sufficient correlations among the variables. Both results were good, and one can proceed with the analysis. The communalities ranged from .604 to .923 and all the items had communalities greater than .6. The items with factor loadings of $\pm .5$ were considered practically significant as proposed by Hair et al. (2019) and were all retained in the factor. The results of the factor solution resulted in 11 factors with some of the constructs having at least one factor. The factor solution explained about 77.85% which is robust since it is above 60%. The 11 factors are presented in the next subsections.

6.9.1 Factor analysis on barriers / obstacles

The construct on barriers / obstacles was made up of 13 items and nine items dropped from the analysis because they were loading on two factors (cross loading) or had factor loadings of less than .5 which were considered to be insignificant. The remaining four items were grouped into a factor and the factor solution is shown in Table 6.42.

Table 6.42: Rotated factor analysis for barriers / obstacles:

Item	Factor 6
Q8d. Lack of proper policing skills and development on crime prevention.	.827
Q8e. Poor in-service training.	.814
Q8f. Unfair and unjust recruitment selection process on new metro police recruits.	.769
Q8c. Control and management of metro police by non-police executive such as municipal manager.	.754
Eigen value	3.147
Percentage variance explained	4.77

The factor was factor 6 on the factor solution. It had an eigen value of 3.147 and explained 4.77% of the total variation. The topmost issues were “lack of proper policing skills and development on crime prevention” and “poor in-service training” with factor loadings of .827 and .814 respectively. The factor was named “barriers / obstacles”.

6.9.2 Factor analysis on solutions

There were 13 items measuring the construct on solutions. Ten of the items were dropped from the analysis since there were cross loading or had insignificant factors or some of them were outliers (one item loading on a single factor). The remaining three items were grouped into a single factor as shown in Table 6.43.

Table 6.43: Rotated factor analysis for solutions:

Item	Factor 11
Q10a. Draft new regulation that will give additional powers to metro police on crime prevention role.	.878
Q10b. Provision of optimal police resources.	.826
Q10d. Related metro police operational and development skills on police standard, behaviour, discipline, management and interpersonal skills.	.601
Eigen value	2.360
Percentage variance explained	3.58

The factor was the 11th factor and it had an eigenvalue of 2.36 and it explained 3.58% of the total variation. The topmost issues that were loading highly on the factor were “draft new regulation that will give additional powers to metro police on crime prevention role” and “provision of optimal police resources” which had factor loadings of .878 and .826 respectively. The factor was named “solutions”.

6.9.3 Factor analysis on functions and responsibilities

The construct on functions and responsibilities was measured using 19 items and six items were dropped owing to cross loading and having insignificant factors with loadings of less than .5. The remaining 13 items were grouped into three factors as shown in Table 6.44.

Table 6.44: Rotated factor analysis for functions and responsibilities:

Item	Factor 3	Factor 7	Factor 8
Q12r. Collecting crime statistics.	.824		
Q12o. Executing access control at access points.	.781		
Q12q. Providing security awareness campaigns.	.775		
Q12s. Identifying crime hotspots.	.764		
Q12p. Conducting potential crime risk, and threat analysis.	.707		
Q12n. Conducting perimeter and building patrols.	.681		
Q12d. Observing of accidents.		.815	
Q12b. Issuing traffic fines.		.807	
Q12a. Patrolling the streets.		.795	
Q12e. Control and monitoring of road traffic flow.		.623	
Q12i. Attending of selling goods without license.			.775
Q12g. Checking of business licenses.			.714
Q12f. Confiscating of hawker's goods.			.704
Eigen values	4.504	3.035	2.946
Percentage variance explained	6.82	4.60	4.46

The factors were factor 3, 7 and 8 in the factor solution with number of items six, four and three respectively. Factor 3 had an eigen value of 4.504 and explained 6.82% of the total variation. The topmost issues on the factor were “collecting crime statistics” and “executing access control at access points” with factor loadings of .824 and .781 respectively. The factor was named 6 because the issues refer to road traffic monitoring. The second factor for the construct was factor 7 with an eigenvalue of 3.035 and accounted for 4.6% of the total variation. The factor was named 7 and the topmost issues were “observing of accidents” and “patrolling the streets” with factor loadings of .815 and 807 respectively. The

third factor on the construct was factor 8 on the factor solution with an eigen value of 2.946 and it explained 4.46% of the total variation. The items topmost were “attending of selling goods without a license” and “checking of business licenses” with factor loadings of .775 and .714 respectively. The factor was named 8 since the items refer to “checking of hawkers trading permits”. Overall, the factors on “functions and responsibilities” account for 15.88% of the total variation.

6.9.4 Factor analysis on crime prevention duration

Crime prevention duration was assessed using 21 items and three of the items were dropped from the analysis owing to having factor loadings of less than .5 or were loading on two factors. The remaining 18 items were grouped into two factors as shown in Table 6.45.

Table 6.45: Rotated factor analysis for crime prevention duration:

Item	Factor 2	Factor 10
Q15g. Docket training.	.859	
Q15q. Accident attendance training.	.858	
Q15u. Anti-corruption course.	.844	
Q15h. Tactical defence training.	.833	
Q15i. Drugs and Nicotine combating training.	.823	
Q15l. Domestic violence training.	.814	
Q15m. Motor vehicle systematic training.	.786	
Q15n. Stop and search training.	.782	
Q15f. Visible policing training.	.779	
Q15r. Police procedures and standards training.	.765	
Q15b. Duty point training.	.756	
Q15c. Crime prevention training.	.717	
Q15e. By-laws enforcement training.	.716	

Q15p. Report writing training.	.673	
Q15t. Computer training course.	.599	
Q15j. Aarto training.		.759
Q15k. Road policing training.		.749
Q15o. Traffic offence control training.		.707
Eigen values	11.088	2.549
Percentage variance explained	16.80	3.86

The factors were factor 2 and factor 10 in the factor solution with 15 and 3 items respectively. Factor 2 had an eigenvalue of 11.088 and it accounted for 16.8% of the total variation. The topmost issues were “docket training” and “accident attendance training” with factor loadings of .859 and .858 respectively. The factor was named “anti-corruption courses and drugs and nicotine combating training” since it involved issues on .844. and .833 as outlined in the stand.

Factor 10 was the second factor on the construct and it had an eigenvalue of 2.549 and it explained 3.86% of the total variation. The topmost issues were “Aarto training” and “road policing training” with factor loadings of .759 and .749 respectively. The factor was named “motor vehicle system training, stop and search and visible policing” since the issues were dealing with road traffic management. The factors on “crime prevention duration” accounted for 20.69% of the total variation.

6.9.5 Factor analysis on crime prevention training

Crime prevention training was assessed using 21 items and five items were dropped from the analysis owing to having factor loadings of less than .5 or were loading on two factors. The remaining 16 items were grouped into one factor as shown in Table 6.46.

Table 6.46: Rotated factor analysis for crime prevention training:

Item	Factor 1
Q17j. Police tactical respond training.	.916
Q17k. Dockets training.	.874
Q17o. Dangerous Weapons training.	.858
Q17l. Police tracing and profiling training.	.836
Q17t. Training on attacks on police officers.	.833
Q17f. High speed chase vehicle training.	.822
Q17n. Stop and search training.	.798
Q17i. Drugs and Nicotine identification training.	.776
Q17p. Radio Procedure training.	.743
Q17q. Crime intelligence training.	.740
Q17s. Assets identification training.	.723
Q17u. Anti-corruption course.	.717
Q17h. Police defensive technique training.	.707
Q17c. Drug and Nicotine combating training.	.681
Q17a. Rail and port crime prevention training.	.658
Q17b. Crime prevention training.	.655
Eigen value	11.195
Percentage variance explained	16.96

The factor was factor 1 in the factor solution and it had an eigen-value of 11.195 and it explained about 16.96% of the total variation. The topmost issues that were loading highly on the factor were “police tactical respond training” and “dockets training” which had factor loadings of .916 and .874 respectively. The factor was

named “crime prevention training” since all the items were grouped into one factor.

6.9.6 Factor analysis on additional powers

There were 11 items measuring the construct on additional powers. Four of the items were dropped from the analysis since there were having factor loadings of less than .5 or loading significantly on two factors. The remaining seven items were grouped into two factors as shown in Table 6.47:

Table 6.47: Rotated factor analysis for additional powers:

Item	Factor 5	Factor 9
Q21a. Powers to do stop and search members of the public when suspecting them to be in possession of any unauthorised goods and items suspected to have been stolen or used in suspected crime.	.863	
Q21c. Powers to arrest without warrant on any offence committed under any crime schedule.	.846	
Q21i. Powers to administer motor vehicle accidents within the municipality for purpose of statistics.	.836	
Q21b. Powers of arrest with warrant.	.808	
Q21e. To be given powers to preserve/store evidence recovered at the scene of crime.		.820
Q21g. Powers to establish crime intelligence unit.		.819
Q21d. To be given powers to investigate crimes committed in their juristic area.		.767
Eigen values	3.775	2.567
Percentage variance explained	5.72	3.89

The factors were factor 5 and 9 in the factor solution with number of items four and three respectively. Factor 5 had an eigen value of 3.775 and explained 5.72% of the total variation. The topmost issues on the factor were “powers to do stop and search members of the public when suspecting them to be in possession of any unauthorised goods and items suspected to have been stolen or used in suspected crime” and “powers to arrest without warrant on any offence committed under any crime schedule” with factor loadings of .863 and .846 respectively.

The factor was named factor 5 because the issues referred to were “powers to administer motor vehicle accidents within the municipality for purpose of statistics” with factor loading of .836. The second factor for the construct was factor 9 with an eigenvalue of 2.567 and accounted for 3.89% of the total variation. The factor was named factor 9 and the topmost issues were “to be given powers to preserve/store evidence recovered at the scene of crime” and “powers to establish crime intelligence unit” with factor loadings of .820 and .819 respectively. The construct on “additional powers” accounted for 10.61% of the total variation.

6.9.7 Factor analysis on partnership roles

The construct on security partnership roles was measured using five items and all the items were included in the factor solution in Table 6.48:

Table 6.48: Rotated factor analysis for partnership roles:

Item	Factor 4
Q31b. Community safety initiatives	.887
Q31c. Security cluster forum	.868
Q31a. Community policing forum	.854
Q31d. Sector policing initiatives	.813
Q31e. Business against crime	.560
Eigen value	4.217
Percentage variance explained	6.39

The factor was factor 4 on the factor solution and it had an eigenvalue of 4.217 and it accounted for 6.39% of the total variation. The factor was named “partnership roles”. The issues that were topmost were “community safety initiatives” and “security cluster forum” with factor loadings of .887 and .868 respectively. The factor named “community policing forum”, “sector policing initiatives” and “business against crime” with loading factor of .854, .813 and .560 separately.

6.9.8 Summary of the factor solution

The factor solution grouped together items that were highly correlated and items of the same construct were grouped into one construct or sub-constructs of two or three. It can be concluded that the items were measuring what they intended to measure, and the instrument was valid.

Objectives: To provide recommendations based on research findings for the better crime prevention and policing theory/model to deal with crime holistically between metro police divisions and SAPS.

6.10 USING INDEPENDENT T-TESTS AND ANOVA TO DETERMINE MEAN SCORES DIFFERENCE

Comparative analysis was done using the independent t-test and ANOVA where the independent t-test was used to determine mean difference for variables with two groups and the ANOVA was used to determine mean difference for variables with at least three groups. This was to assist in the development of the model and whether recommendations could be done by also looking at socio-demographic characteristics. The independent t-tests and ANOVA have three assumptions, namely, the observations should be independent, samples should be coming from normally distributed populations and the group variances should be equal (Emerson, 2017). The police officers were randomly selected and independence was met. The central limit theorem was applied to achieve normality since the sample size was more than 30, in this case, 160.

The Levene's test for homogeneity of variance was used to test for equal variances. For the independent t-tests, if the variances across the two groups were not equal then statistics under "equal variance not assumed" were presented. In the case of ANOVA, if the group variances were equal, the traditional F-test for testing equality of means was used and if at least one pair of means was different, the Tukey HSD was used to determine which group means were different. If the variances were not equal across groups, the Welch robust test of equality of means was used and the test was significant, the Games Howell post-hoc analysis was used to determine which pair of means differ.

The 5% level of significance was used and a p-value of less than .05 showed that the means were different. A highly significant test was shown by having a p-value of less than .01. Composite variables were found by averaging or summing the items in a construct as proposed by Subedi (2016). The composites variable created were:

- Barriers / obstacles
- Solutions
- Roles

- Crime prevention duration
- Crime prevention training
- Resources
- Specialised services
- Additional powers and functions for metro police officers
- Partnership roles.

The composite variables were created by averaging items in a construct except for the construct “resources” and “specialised services” where the items were summed up. The tests are presented in the next subsections.

6.10.1 Independent t-test for significant difference in mean scores based on gender

Gender was divided into males and females. The test on homogeneity of variance resulted in all composite variables having equal variances except the variables “crime prevention duration” and “crime prevention training” with p-values of .026 and .014 respectively and in this case statistics under “equal variances not assumed” were presented. The results of the independent t-tests by gender are summarised in Table 6.49.

Table 6.49: Independent t-test for mean score difference by gender:

Indicator	Group Statistics				Levene's Test for Equality of Variances			T-test for Equality of Means		
	Gender	N	Mean	SD	Equal Variances	F	Sig	t-value	df	Sig (2-tailed p-value)
Q8. Barriers /obstacles	Male	96	3.629	.778	Assumed	.566	.453	1.554	156	.122
	Female	62	3.420	.895	Not			1.507	117.099	.134
Q10. Solutions	Male	96	4.018	.733	Assumed	1.077	.301	.356	157	.722
	Female	63	3.974	.803	Not			.350	124.170	.727
Q12. Roles	Male	96	3.628	.714	Assumed	.155	.694	2.036	157	.043
	Female	63	3.389	.735	Not			2.024	129.984	.045
	Male	96	2.109	1.360	Assumed	5.053	.026	1.858	157	.065

Q15.	Crime prevention duration	Female	63	1.7 25	1.132	Not			1.930	148.260	.056
Q17.	Crime prevention training	Male	96	2.2 20	.979	Assumed	6.206	.014	3.047	157	.003
		Female	63	1.7 72	.784	Not			3.190	150.785	.002
Q20.	Resources	Male	96	9.4 38	3.091	Assumed	1.615	.206	.358	157	.721
		Female	63	9.2 54	3.277	Not			.353	127.218	.725
Q20.	Specialised services	Male	96	8.7 08	3.238	Assumed	1.916	.168	.649	157	.517
		Female	63	8.3 49	3.660	Not			.633	121.185	.528
Q21.	Additional powers and functions for	Male	96	4.0 92	.960	Assumed	.442	.507	-.598	157	.551
		Female	63	4.1 81	.847	Not			-.614	143.858	.540

metro police
officers

Q31.	Male	95	2.9	1.114	Assumed	1.622	.205	.097	156	.922
Partnership			51							
roles	Female	63	2.9	1.209	Not			.096	125.295	.924
			33							

The independent t-tests showed that there was no gender difference for the composite variables; barriers / obstacles, solutions, crime prevention duration, resources, specialised services, additional powers and functions for metro police officers and partnership roles. These results suggest that gender difference does not have an effect on these issues. However, the influence of gender on roles and crime prevention training was significant. Therefore, the findings show that males and females tend to have differences on views on crime prevention duration and training.

The results of the independent t-tests showed that there was statistically significant difference in roles between males and females ($t(157) = 2.036, p = .043$). The results of the test indicate that the mean score for males ($M = 3.63, SD = .71$) was significantly higher than the mean score for females ($M = 3.39, SD = .74$). The magnitude of the mean difference in the group was .24 and the 95% confidence interval around the difference between the group means was from .01 to .47. A small effect of .01 ($\eta^2 = .01$) was obtained and 1% of the amount of variability in roles is being accounted for by gender. The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.1.

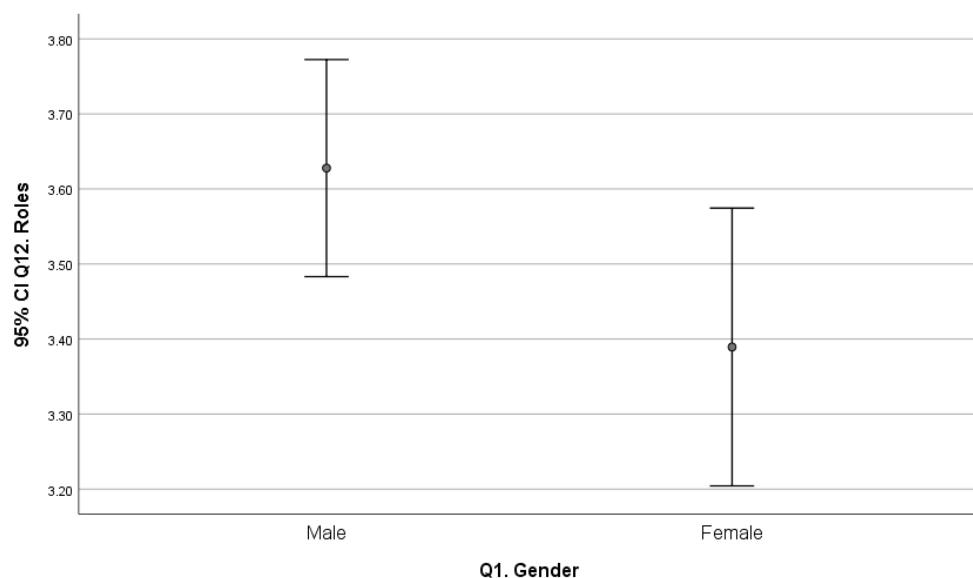


Figure 6.1: Confidence interval error bars for roles by gender

The mean for males was close to four indicating that the issues are functions and responsibilities of metro police to a large extent. At the same time, the females had a mean close to three indicating that the issues are the roles of metro police to some extent.

The independent sample t-test was conducted to compare crime prevention training concerning to gender difference. The results showed a statistically significant difference, $t(150.785) = 3.19, p = .002$ with males ($M = 2.22, SD = .98$) having a significantly higher mean score than females ($M = 1.77, SD = .78$). The magnitude of the mean difference in the group was .45 and the 95% confidence interval around the difference between the group means was from .17 to .73. A moderate effect size of .06 ($\eta^2 = .06$) was obtained and 6% of the amount of variation in crime prevention training was explained by gender. The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.2.

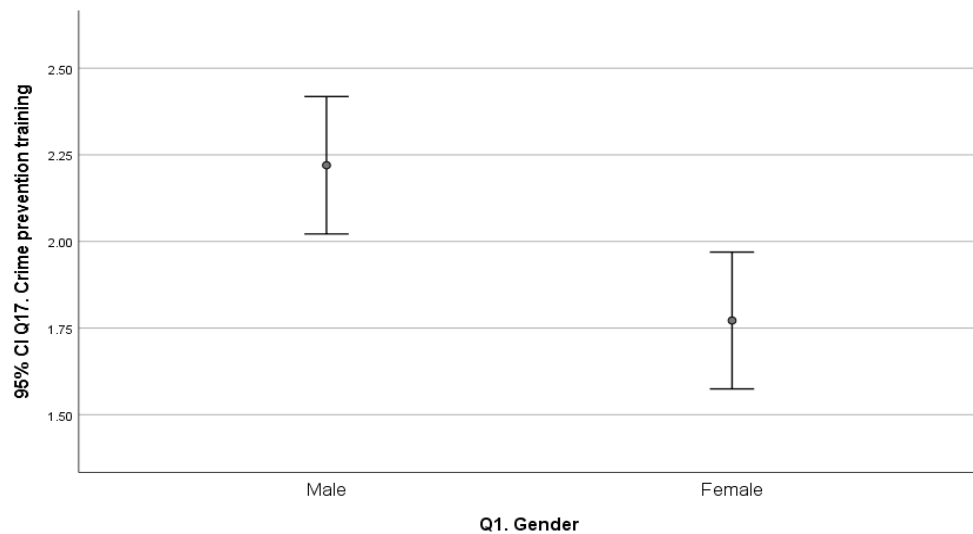


Figure 6.2: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by gender

Both means are close to two indicating that the crime prevention training is being done to a small extent. The mean for males was higher than the mean for females indicating that the level of extent of training programmes was slightly higher for males than females. This means that the males are likely to get training than the females.

6.10.2 Independent t-test for significant difference in mean scores based on whether one worked for the municipal police before

The respondents were asked whether they worked for the metro police before or not. The variable was divided into “yes” and “no”. The test on homogeneity of variance resulted in all composite variables having equal variances except the variables “solutions” with a p-value of $=.018$ and in this case, statistics under “equal variances not assumed” were presented. The results of the independent t-tests by whether one has worked for the municipal police before are summarised in Table 6.50.

Table 6.50: Independent t-test for mean score difference by whether one worked for the municipal police before:

Indicator	Group Statistics				Levene's Test for Equality of Variances			T-test for Equality of Means		
	Gender	N	Mean	SD	Equal Variances	F	Sig	t-value	df	Sig (2-tailed p-value)
Q8. Barriers / obstacles	Yes	93	3.522	.838	Assumed	.787	.376	.063	152	.950
	No	61	3.513	.873	Not			.063	124.712	.950
Q10. Solutions	Yes	93	3.974	.691	Assumed	5.718	.018	-.661	153	.509
	No	62	4.057	.858	Not			-.633	111.329	.528
Q12. Roles	Yes	93	3.5037	.778	Assumed	3.204	.075	-.447	153	.656
	No	62	3.5572	.650	Not			-.463	145.235	.644
Q15. Crime prevention duration	Yes	93	1.784	1.295	Assumed	.311	.578	-1.972	153	.050
	No	62	2.195	1.234	Not			-1.991	135.103	.049
Q17. Crime prevention training	Yes	93	1.881	.929	Assumed	.709	.401	-2.055	153	.042
	No	62	2.181	.823	Not			-2.105	141.062	.037

Q20.	Yes	93	8.893	3.34	Assumed	2.800	.096	-2.296	153	.023
Resources				1						
	No	62	10.065	2.73	Not			-2.390	146.600	.018
				3						
Q20.	Yes	93	8.129	3.63	Assumed	2.122	.147	-1.712	153	.089
Specialised services				3						
	No	62	9.081	2.98	Not			-1.780	146.285	.077
				8						
Q21.	Yes	93	4.041	.983	Assumed	1.713	.193	-1.656	153	.100
Additional powers and functions for metro police officers										
	No	62	4.290	.805	Not			-1.723	146.518	.087
Q31.	Yes	92	2.996	1.13	Assumed	.059	.809	.920	152	.359
Partnership roles				2						
	No	62	2.823	1.16	Not			.915	128.561	.362
				3						

The independent t-tests showed that there was no difference for the composite variables; barriers / obstacles, solutions, roles, crime prevention duration, specialised services, additional powers and functions for metro police officers and partnership roles by whether one has worked for the municipal police before or not. These results suggest that whether one worked for the municipal before or not does not have an effect on these issues. However, the influence of whether one worked for the municipal police before or not was significant for crime prevention training and resources. Therefore, the findings show that those who have worked for the municipal before and those who have not tend to have differences on views on crime prevention training and resources.

The results of the independent t-tests showed that there was a statistically significant difference in crime prevention training between those who have worked for the municipal police before and those who have not worked for them before ($t(153) = -2.055, p = .042$). The results of the test indicates that the mean score for those who have worked for the municipal police before ($M = 1.88, SD = .93$) was significantly lower than the mean score for those who have not worked for the municipal police before ($M = 2.18, SD = .82$).

The magnitude of the mean difference in the group was $-.30$ and the 95% confidence interval around the difference between the group means was from $-.59$ to $-.01$. A small effect size of $.03$ ($\eta^2 = .03$) was obtained and 3% of the amount of variability in crime prevention training is being accounted for by whether one has previously worked for the municipal or not. The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 5.3.

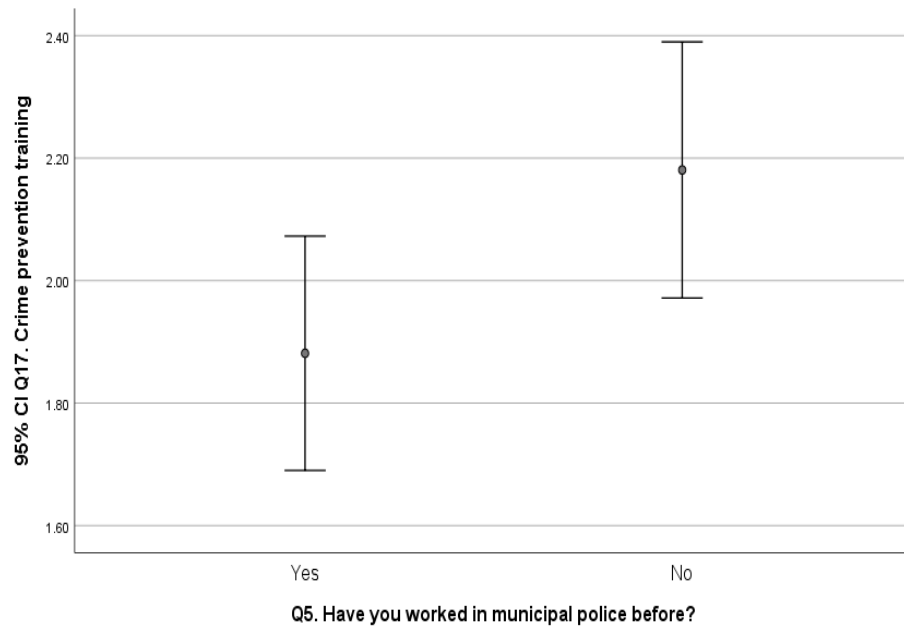


Figure 6.3: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by whether one has previously worked for the municipality.

Both means are close to two indicating that the crime prevention training is being done to a small extent. The mean for those who have not worked for the municipal before was higher than the mean for those who have worked for the municipal police before indicating that the level of extent of training programmes was slightly higher for those who have not worked for the municipal before. This means that those who have not worked for the municipal before are likely to get training than those who have previously worked for the municipal.

The independent sample t-test was conducted to compare resources with respect to whether one has previously worked for the municipal police. The results showed a statistically significant difference, $t(153) = -2.296, p = .023$ with those who have previously not worked for the municipal police ($M = 10.06, SD = 2.73$) having a significantly higher mean score than those who have worked for the municipal before ($M = 8.89, SD = 3.34$). The magnitude of the mean difference in the group was -1.17 and the 95% confidence interval around the difference between the group means was from -2.18 to $-.16$. A moderate effect

size of .06 ($\eta^2 = .06$) was obtained and 6% of the amount of variation in crime prevention training was explained for by whether one has previously worked for the municipal police. The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.4.

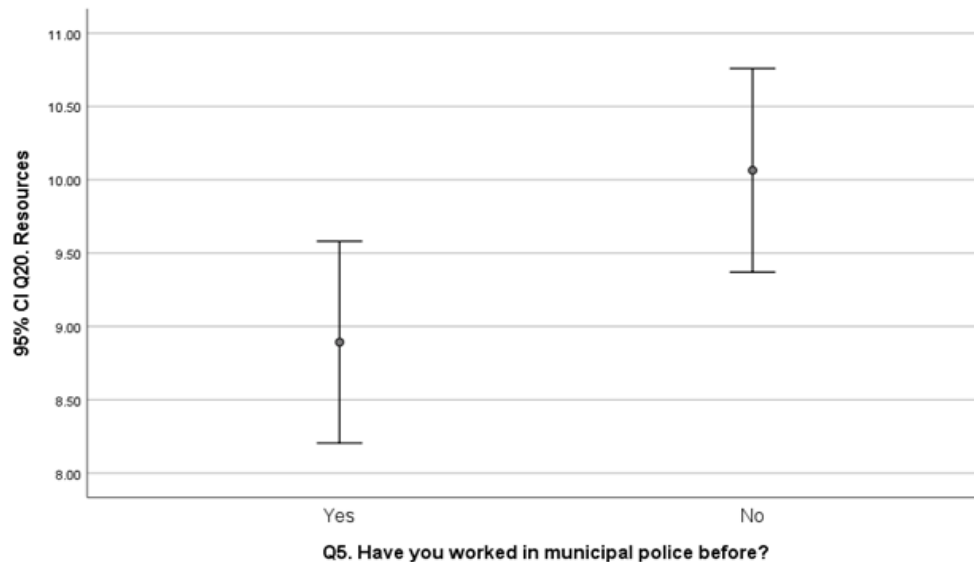


Figure 6.4: Confidence interval error bars for resources by whether one has worked for the municipality before.

The mean for those who have not worked for the municipal before is ten. This means that out of the 14 resources, the group identified ten that can be used to combat and prevent crime effectively while those who have worked for the municipal before identified nine out of 14.

6.10.3 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on municipality

Three metropolitan municipalities participated in the study, namely, Ekurhuleni, Johannesburg and Tshwane. Levene’s test of homogeneity of variances resulted in the constructs “solutions”, “crime prevention duration”, “resources” and “specialised services” having unequal variances across groups. The Welch robust test for equality of means and where there were differences the Games

Howell test was used as the post- hoc test. For those constructs where the group variances were equal, the traditional ANOVA F-test was used to test for equality of means and the Tukey HSD was used as a post-hoc test where differences exist. The results of the tests of equality of means are summarised in Table 6.51.

Table 6.51 One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on municipality:

Constructs	Levene's test for equality of variance		Test for equality of means	
	F	p-value	F	p-value
Q8. Barriers / obstacles	1.246	.29	4.693	.010
Q10. Solutions	3.449	.034	6.365b	.003
Q12. Roles	.266	.767	7.322	.001
Q15. Crime prevention duration	6.371	.002	.959b	.387
Q17. Crime prevention training	.301	.74	.403	.669
Q20. Resources	5.946	.003	2.511b	.087
Q20. Specialised services	4.998	.008	5.034b	.008
Q21. Additional powers and functions for metro police officers	1.683	.189	1.673	.191
Q31. Partnership roles	.895	.411	19.573	$p < .001$

b Welch F-statistic

The results of the F-tests revealed no significant difference in means among municipalities concerning to crime prevention duration, crime prevention training, resources and additional powers and functions for metro police officers. The municipality was not a determining factor on the rating of the issues, that is, the respondents gave similar ratings on these issues by municipality.

There was a significant difference in means across municipalities regarding barriers/ obstacles, solutions, roles, specialised services, and partnership roles.

Municipalities had an effect on the views of the respondents on these issues. The significant variables are presented in detail in the next paragraphs.

The ANOVA analysis of the difference between respondent views across municipalities for barriers / obstacles revealed a statistical significance difference ($F(2, 156) = 4.693, p = .010$). A moderate effect size of .06 ($\eta^2 = .06$) was obtained and approximately 6% of the total variance in barriers / obstacles was accounted for by the independent variable municipality. Post hoc analyses using Games Howell is summarised in Table 6.52.

Table 6.52: Tukey HSD post-hoc analysis of barriers / obstacles by municipality:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Municipality	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
Tshwane municipality	70	3.3261	
Johannesburg municipality	43	3.5683	3.5683
Ekurhuleni municipality	46		3.8066

Results indicate that the mean for Ekurhuleni municipality ($M = 3.81, SD = .67$) was significantly higher than the mean for Tshwane ($M = 3.33, SD = .89$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.5.

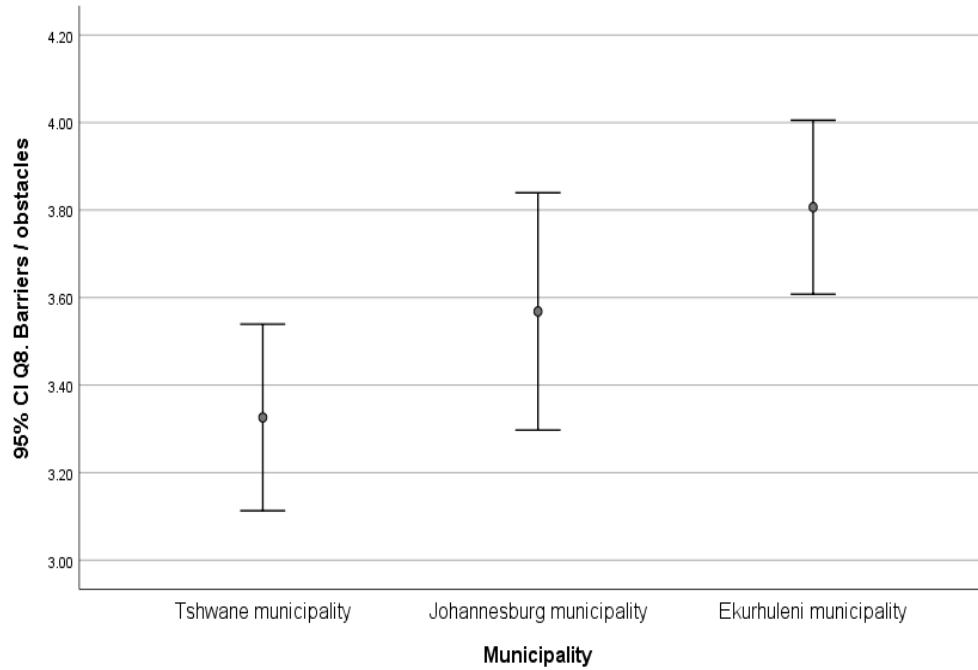


Figure 6.5: Confidence interval error bars for barriers / obstacles by municipality

The means for Ekurhuleni and Johannesburg were close to four indicating that the barriers / obstacles hampering crime prevention, reduction and combating to metro police were to a large extent while in Tshwane the mean was close to three indicating that they were occurring to some extent.

Since the assumption of homogeneity of variance was not met, the Welch robust test of equality of means was used and it revealed that the three municipalities differ in views on solutions that could address the barriers / obstacles (*Welch's* $F(2, 92.737) = 6.365, p = .003$). A moderate effect size, $\omega^2 = .06$ was obtained and approximately 6% of the total variance in solutions was accounted for by the independent variable municipality. Post hoc analyses using Games Howell are summarised in Table 6.53.

Table 6.53: Games Howell post-hoc tests for solutions by municipality:

Games - Howell	Municipality	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
			1	2
	Tshwane municipality	71	3.8701	
	Johannesburg municipality	43	3.9138	
	Ekurhuleni municipality	46		4.3035

The mean for Ekurhuleni municipality ($M = 4.30$, $SD = .83$) was significantly higher than the mean for Tshwane ($M = 3.87$, $SD = .74$) and the mean for Johannesburg municipality ($M = 3.91$, $SD = .86$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.6.

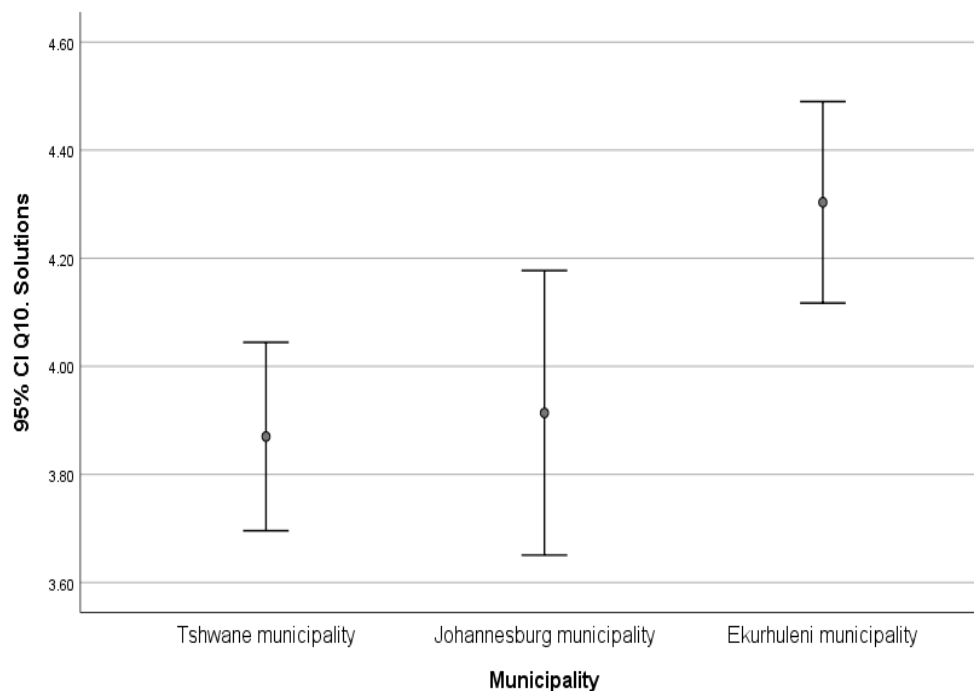


Figure 6.6: Confidence interval error bars for solutions by municipality

The results revealed that all the means were close to four indicating that solutions could address the barriers / obstacles to a large extent. The level of extent was higher for Ekurhuleni as compared to the other municipalities.

A univariate analysis of variance showed that the effect of municipality on roles was statistically significant ($F(2, 157) = 7.322, p = .001$). A moderate effect size, $\eta^2 = .09$ was obtained and approximately 9% of the total variance was being accounted for by municipality. The post hoc analyses using Tukey HSD is summarised in Table 6.54.

Table 6.54: Tukey HSD post-hoc test for roles by municipality:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Municipality	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
Johannesburg municipality	43	3.3825	
Tshwane municipality	71	3.4105	
Ekurhuleni municipality	46		3.8671

The mean for Ekurhuleni municipality ($M = 3.87, SD = .68$) was significantly higher than the mean for Johannesburg ($M = 3.38, SD = .71$) and the mean for Tshwane municipality ($M = 3.41, SD = .71$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.7.

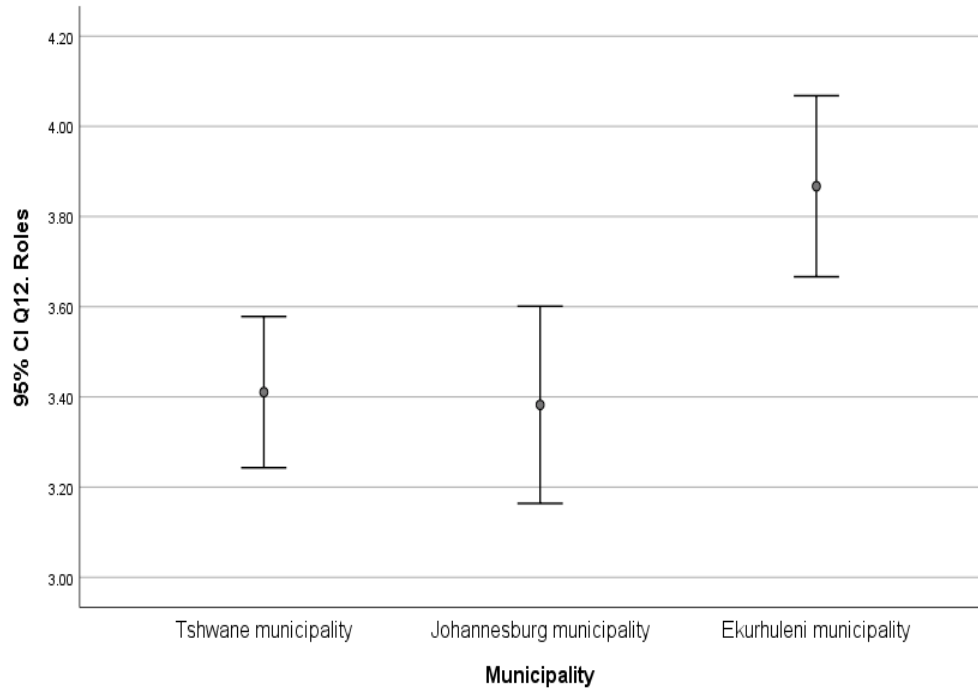


Figure 6.7: Confidence interval error bars for roles by municipality

The mean for Ekurhuleni municipality was close to four indicating that the roles were functions and responsibilities of metro police to a large extent while in Tshwane and Johannesburg the mean was close to three indicating that there were roles to some extent.

The Welch robust test of equality of means revealed that the effect of municipality on specialised services was statistically significant (*Welch's* $F(2,90.301) = 5.034, p = .008$). A small effect size of $\omega^2 = .05$ was obtained and approximately 5% of the total variance in specialised services is accounted for by municipality. The Games-Howell post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.55.

Table 6.55: Games Howell post-hoc test for specialised services by municipality:

Games-Howell	Municipality	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
			1	2
	Tshwane	71	7.7324	
Johannesburg	43	8.5116	8.5116	
Ekurhuleni	46		9.8913	

The mean for Ekurhuleni municipality ($M = 9.89, SD = 3.95$) was significantly higher than the mean for Tshwane ($M = 7.73, SD = 3.00$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.8.

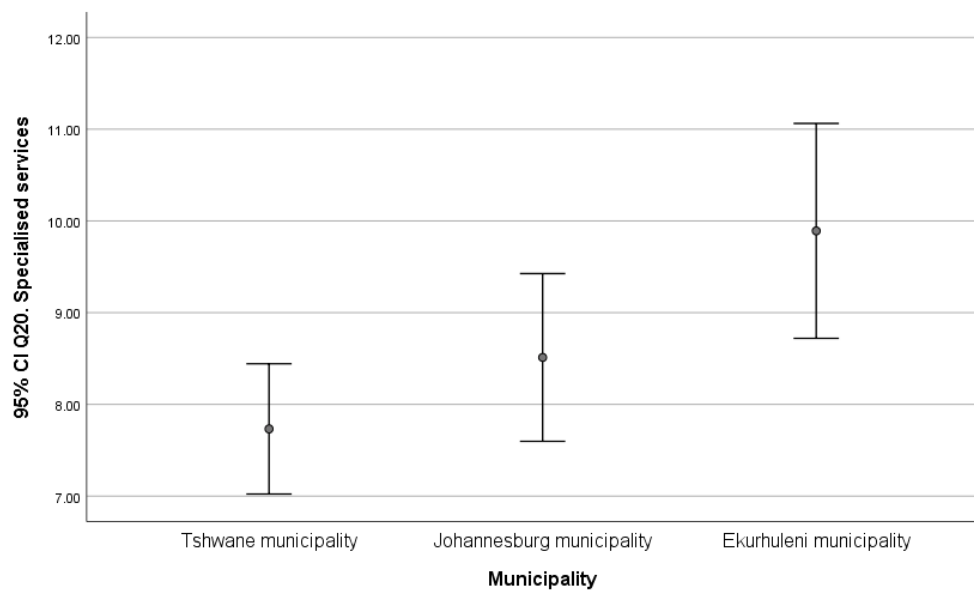


Figure 6.8: Confidence interval error bars for specialised services by municipality
Ekurhuleni municipality had a mean close to ten indicating that approximately ten out of the 14 specialised services can combat and prevent crime effectively for Tshwane municipality. It was approximately eight out of the 14 specialised services, while Johannesburg had a mean close to nine out of 14 specialised services.

The ANOVA analysis of the difference between respondent views across municipalities for partnership roles revealed a statistical significance difference

($F(2, 156) = 19.573, p < .001$). A large effect size, of .20, that is, $\eta^2 = .20$ was obtained and approximately 20% of the total variance in partnership roles was being accounted for by municipality. The Tukey HSD post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.56.

Table 6.56: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for partnership roles by municipality:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Municipality	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
Johannesburg	43	2.5163	
Tshwane	71	2.6817	
Ekurhuleni	45		3.7467

The mean for Johannesburg municipality ($M = 2.52, SD = 1.01$) and the mean for Tshwane ($M = 2.68, SD = 1.01$) were significantly lower than the mean for Ekurhuleni municipality ($M = 3.75, SD = 1.09$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.9:

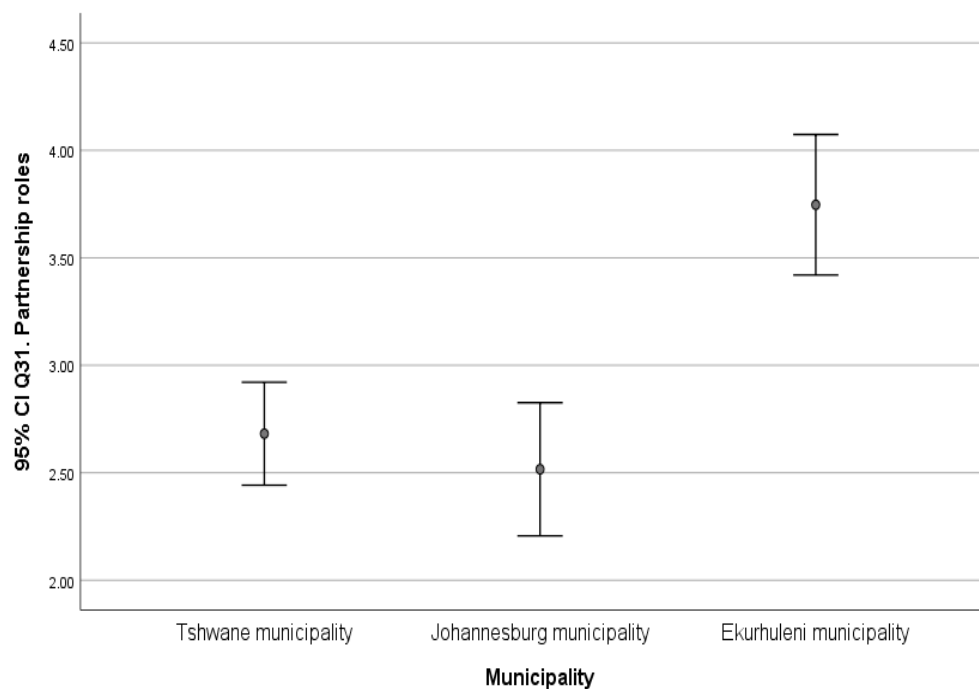


Figure 6.9: Confidence interval error bars for partnership roles by municipality

The mean for Ekurhuleni municipality was close to four indicating that the partnership roles of the crime prevention programmes occur to a large extent while in Tshwane and Johannesburg the mean was close to three indicating that they occur to some extent.

6.10.4 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on highest educational qualification.

The highest educational qualification was classified into four categories: standard 10 / Grade 12 and below, certificate, diploma, and degree holders. Levene's test of homogeneity of variances resulted in all the constructs having equal variances across groups. The traditional ANOVA F-test was used to test for equality of means and the results are summarised in Table 6.57.

Table 6.57: One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on highest educational qualification:

Constructs	Levene's test for equality of variance		Test for equality of means	
	F	p-value	F	p-value
Q8. Barriers / obstacles	1.968	.121	.108	.955
Q10. Solutions	.67	.572	.393	.758
Q12. Roles	.836	.476	1.042	.376
Q15. Crime prevention duration	2.645	.051	1.619	.187
Q17. Crime prevention training	.813	.488	.813	.488
Q20. Resources	.569	.636	1.273	.286
Q20. Specialised services	2.134	.098	.259	.855
Q21. Additional powers and functions for metro police officers	1.922	.128	1.485	.221
Q31. Partnership roles	.119	.949	1.194	.314

b Welch F-statistic

The F-tests results revealed that there was no significant difference in means among educational levels with respect to barriers / obstacles, solutions, roles, crime prevention duration, crime prevention training, resources, specialised services, additional powers and functions for metro police officers and partnership roles. The highest educational level was not a determining factor on the rating of the issues, that is, the respondents gave similar ratings on these issues by educational level.

6.10.5 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on number of years working in municipal police

The number of years working in municipal police was classified into five groups which were at most 5 years, 6 – 10 years, 11 – 15 years, 16 – 20 years and more

than 20 years. Levene’s test of homogeneity of variances resulted in the constructs “crime prevention duration”, “specialised services” and “additional powers and functions for metro police officers” having unequal variances across groups. The Welch robust test for equality of means was used to test for difference in means for these constructs and if test was significant, the Games Howell test was used for post-hoc analysis. For the other constructs, the traditional ANOVA F-test was used to test for equality of means and the Tukey HSD as a post-hoc test. The F-test results for the equality of means are summarised in Table 6.58.

Table 6.58: One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on number of years working in municipal police:

Constructs	Levene’s test for equality of variance		Test for equality of means	
	F	p-value	F	p-value
Q8. Barriers / obstacles	1.421	.23	.072	.990
Q10. Solutions	.511	.727	1.624	.171
Q12. Roles	1.139	.341	2.472	.047
Q15. Crime prevention duration	5.349	$p < .001$	3.774b	.008
Q17. Crime prevention training	1.408	.234	3.532	.009
Q20. Resources	.243	.913	.368	.831
Q20. Specialised services	4.187	.003	2.824b	.031
Q21. Additional powers and functions for metro police officers	2.599	.038	1.881b	.124
Q31. Partnership roles	1.991	.099	1.697	.153

b Welch F-statistic

The results of the F-tests showed that there was no significant difference in means across number of years working in municipal police for the issues barriers

/ obstacles, solutions, resources, additional powers and functions for metro police officers and partnership roles. The number of years working in municipal police had no effect on the rating of the issues, that is, the respondents gave similar ratings on these issues by number of years working in municipal police. There was statistically significant difference in means across number of years working in municipal police with respect to roles, crime prevention duration, crime prevention training and specialised services. The number of years working in municipal police affected the views of the respondents on these issues. The significant variables are presented in detail in the next paragraphs.

The ANOVA analysis of the difference between respondent views across number of years working in municipal police for roles revealed a statistical significance difference ($F(4,154) = 2.472, p = .047$). A moderate effect size, $\eta^2 = .06$ was obtained and approximately 6% of the total variance in roles was being accounted for by number of years working in municipal police. The Tukey HSD post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.59. The test was marginally significant and the post-hoc test did not reveal any differences as in Table 6.59.

Table 6.59: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for roles by number of years working in municipal police:

Tukey HSDa,b		
		Subset for alpha = 0.05
Q6. How long have you been working in municipal police?N		1
16 - 20 years	32	3.2165
More than 20 years	51	3.5175
11 - 15 years	35	3.6248
At most 5 years	19	3.7147
6 - 10 years	22	3.7390

The lowest mean was of those with 16 – 20 years working in municipal police ($M = 3.22$, $SD = .75$) while the highest mean was of those with 6 – 10 years working in municipal police ($M = 3.74$, $SD = .71$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.10 below which shows slight overlap between those with not more than 10 years and those with 16 – 20 years working in municipal police.

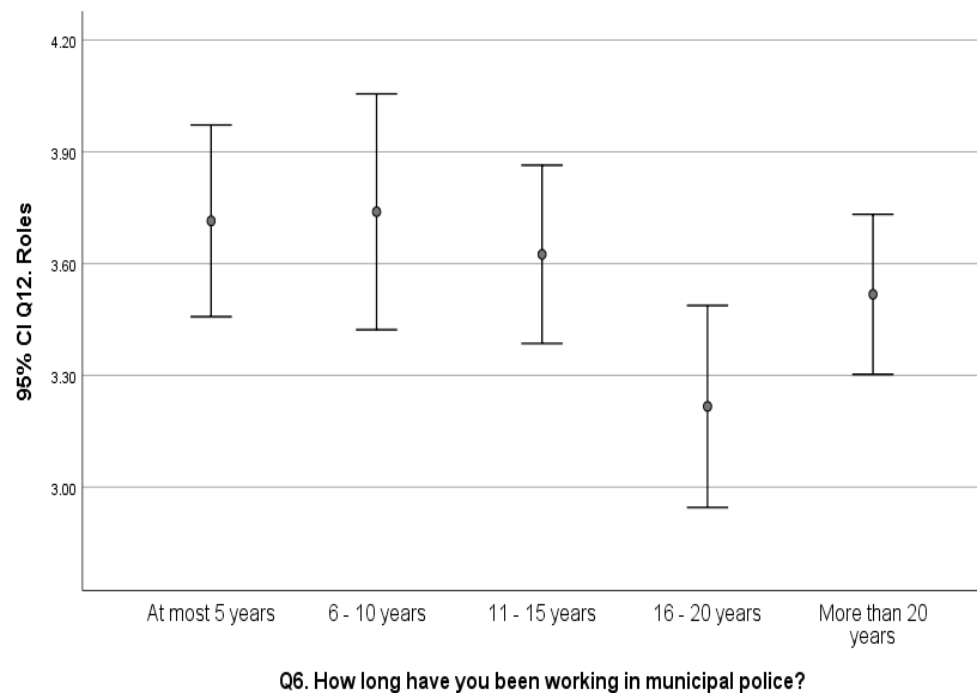


Figure 6.10: Confidence interval error bars for roles by number of years working in municipal police

Those with 16 – 20 years working in municipal police have a mean close to three indicating that the roles are functions and responsibilities of the metro police to some extent while those with not more than 15 years have means close to four indicating that the roles are functions and responsibilities of the metro police to a large extent.

The Welch robust test of equality of means showed that the effect of number of years working in municipal police on crime prevention duration was statistically significant ($Welch's F(4, 62.283) = 3.774, p = .008$). A moderate effect size, $\omega^2 = .07$ was obtained and approximately 7% of the total variance in crime prevention

duration was accounted for by number of years working in municipal police. The Games Howell post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.60.

Table 6.60: Games-Howell post-hoc tests for crime prevention duration by number of years working in municipal police:

Games-Howell	Q6. How long have you been working in municipal police?	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
			1	2
	16 - 20 years	32	1.4594	
	More than 20 years	51	1.9261	1.9261
	At most 5 years	19	2.0733	2.0733
	11 - 15 years	35	2.0972	2.0972
	6 - 10 years	22		2.4797

Those with 16 – 20 years working in municipal police ($M = 1.46$, $SD = .67$) had significantly lower mean as compared to those with 6 – 10 years ($M = 2.48$, $SD = 1.56$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.11.

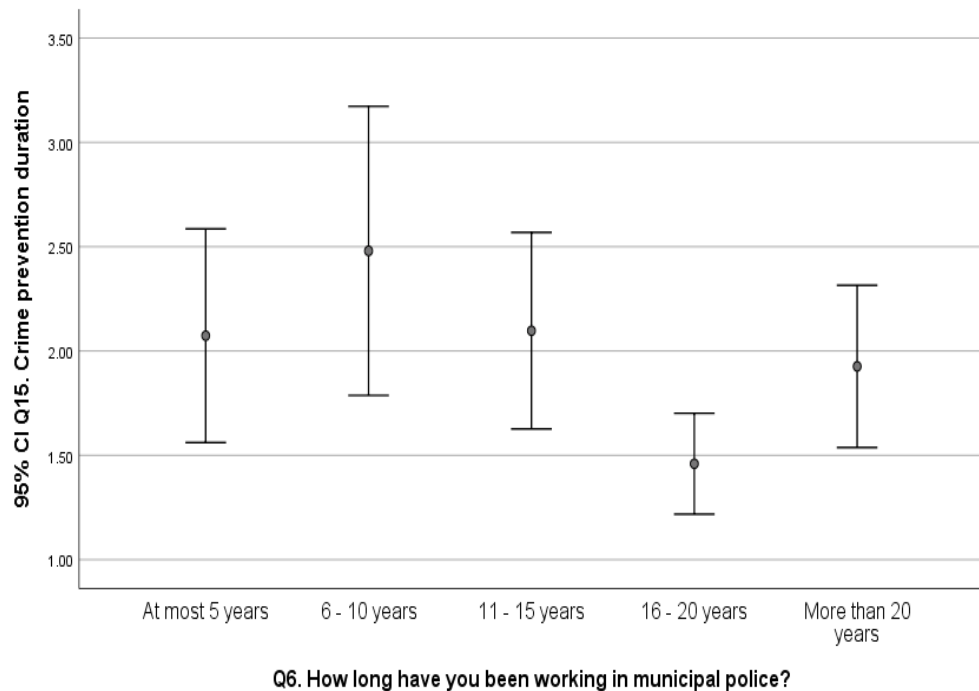


Figure 6.11: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention duration by number of years working in municipal police

Those with 16 – 20 years working in municipal police had a mean close to one indicating that the crime prevention duration occurs for a month. Those with 6 – 10 years indicated that the crime prevention duration is approximately 2 – 3 months in length.

A univariate analysis of variance showed that the effect of number of years working in municipal police on crime prevention training was statistically significant ($F(4, 154) = 3.532, p = .009$). A moderate effect size, $\eta^2 = .08$ was obtained and approximately 8% of the total variance in crime prevention training was accounted for by numbers of years working in municipal police. The Tukey HSD post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.61.

Table 6.61: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for crime prevention training by number of years working in municipal police:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Q6. How long have you been working in municipal police?	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
16 - 20 years	32	1.7374	
11 - 15 years	35	1.9311	1.9311
More than 20 years	51	1.9517	1.9517
6 - 10 years	22		2.4260
At most 5 years	19		2.5219

The mean for those with at most five years working in municipal police ($M = 2.52$, $SD = .90$) and the mean for those 6 – 10 years working in municipal police ($M = 2.43$, $SD = 1.13$) had significantly higher means as compared to those with 16 - 20 years ($M = 1.74$, $SD = .89$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.12.

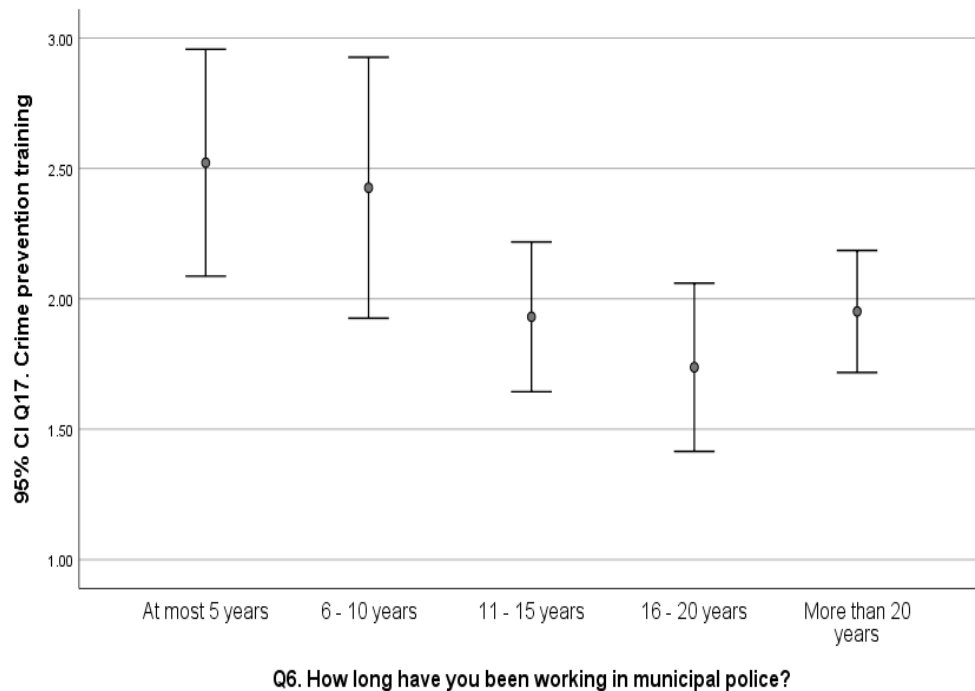


Figure 6.12: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by number of years working in municipal police

Those with 16 – 20 years working in municipal police had a mean close to two indicating that the crime prevention trainings are occurring to a small extent while those with at most five years had a mean close to three indicated that the crime prevention trainings are occurring to some extent. The results reveal that not much crime prevention trainings are occurring.

The Welch robust test of equality of means revealed that the effect of number of years working in municipal police on specialised services was statistically significant ($Welch's F(4, 69.046) = 2.824, p = .031$). A small effect size of $\omega^2 = .04$ was obtained and approximately 4% of the total variance in specialised services was accounted for by number of years working in municipal police. The Games-Howell post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.62.

Table 6.62: Games-Howell post-hoc test for specialised services by number of years working in municipal police:

Tukey HSDa,b	Q6. How long have you been working in municipal police?	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
			1	2
	16 - 20 years	32	7.7188	
	11 - 15 years	35	8.0000	8.0000
	6 - 10 years	22	8.1818	8.1818
	More than 20 years	51	9.2353	9.2353
	At most 5 years	19		9.6842

The mean for those with 16 – 20 years ($M = 7.72, SD = 3.10$) was significantly lower than those with at most five years ($M = 9.68, SD = 1.80$). The confidence interval error bars are shown in Figure 6.13:

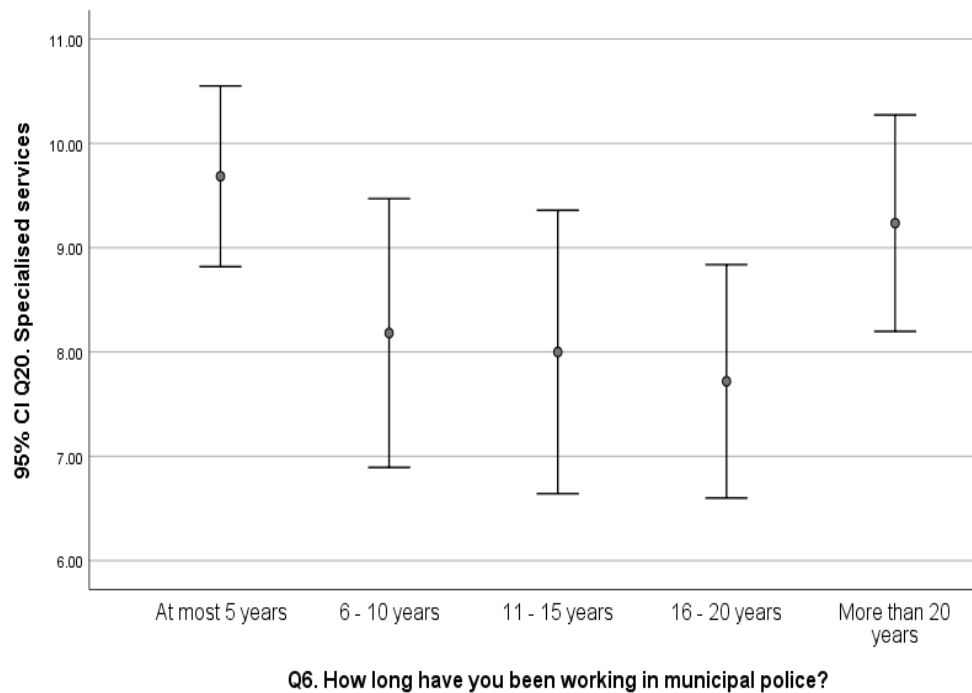


Figure 6.13: Confidence interval error bars for specialised services by number of years working in municipal police

Those with at most five years working in municipal police had a mean close to ten indicating that approximately ten out of the 14 specialised services can enable to combat and prevent crime effectively while those with 16 – 20 years had a mean close to eight indicating that approximately eight out of the fourteen specialised services can enable to combat and prevent crime effectively.

6.10.6 One-way ANOVA for significant difference in mean scores based on position / rank

The position or ranks of the municipal police that participated in the study were superintendent, inspector, sergeant and constable. Levene’s test of equality of variances revealed that the construct “crime prevention training” had unequal variances across groups and the Welch robust test for equality of means was used to test for equality of means and the Games-Howell test as the post-hoc test. In the other constructs, the traditional ANOVA F-test was used to test for equality of means and the Tukey HSD as a post-hoc test. The results of the tests of equality of means are summarised in Table 6.63.

Table 6.63: One-way ANOVA for mean score difference based on position / rank:

Constructs	Levene’s test for equality of variance		Test for equality of means	
	F	p-value	F	p-value
Q8. Barriers / obstacles	.563	.641	3.550	.016
Q10. Solutions	.797	.497	1.670	.176
Q12. Roles	.348	.791	10.801	$p < .001$
Q15. Crime prevention duration	1.65	.18	2.927	.036
Q17. Crime prevention training	6.397	$p < .001$	5.370b	.003
Q20. Resources	.014	.998	2.201	.090
Q20. Specialised services	.783	.505	5.049	.002

Q21. Additional powers and functions for metro police officers	1.076	.361	2.395	.071
Q31. Partnership roles	2.283	.081	2.638	.052

b Welch F-statistic

The results of the F-tests revealed that there was no significant difference in means among ranks with respect to solutions, resources, additional powers and functions for metro police officers and partnership roles. The rank or position of the respondent was not a determining factor on the rating of the issues, that is, the respondents gave similar ratings on these issues by position / rank. There was significant difference in means across ranks with respect to barriers / obstacles, crime prevention duration, crime prevention training, roles and specialised. Rank had an effect on the views of the respondents on these issues. The significant variables are presented in detail in the next paragraphs.

The univariate analysis of variance test results for the difference between respondent views across ranks for barriers / obstacles revealed a statistical significance difference ($F(3, 153) = 3.550, p = .016$). A moderate effect size, $\eta^2 = .07$ was obtained and approximately 7% of the total variance in barriers / obstacles was accounted for by rank. The Tukey-HSD post-hoc test analysis results are summarised in Table 6.64.

Table 6.64: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for barriers / obstacles by position:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Q7. What is your current position/rank?N		Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
Sergeant	14	3.2903	
Superintended	65	3.3416	3.3416
Constable	35	3.7041	3.7041
Inspector	43		3.8013

The mean for sergeants ($M = 3.29$, $SD = .83$) was significantly lower than those of inspectors ($M = 3.8$, $SD = .69$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.14.

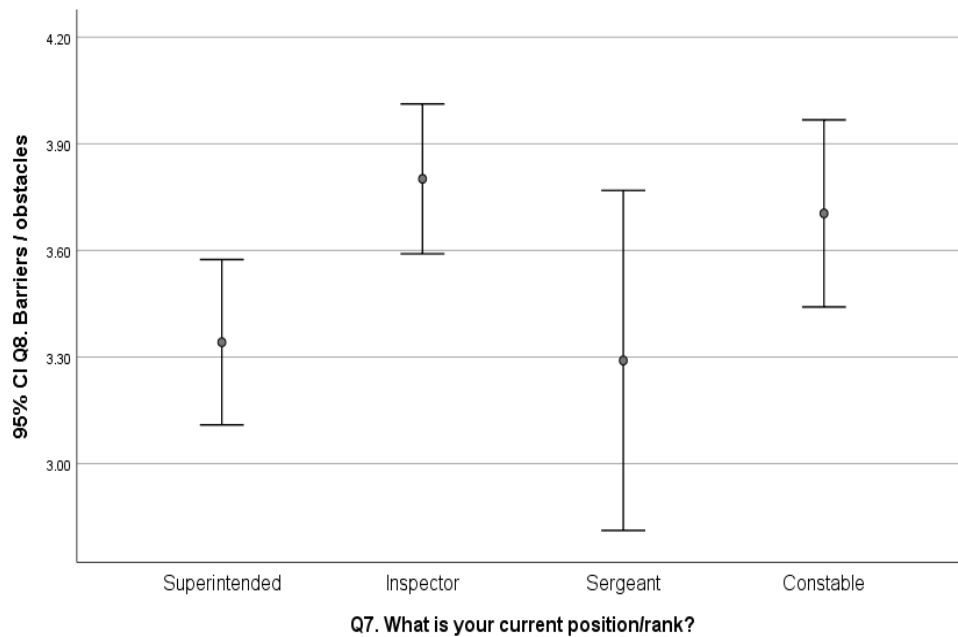


Figure 6.14: Confidence interval error bars for barriers / obstacles by position

The mean for inspectors was close to four indicating that the barriers/obstacles hampering crime prevention, reduction and combating to metro police were to a large extent while the mean for sergeants was close to three indicating that there were occurring to some extent. The ANOVA analysis of the difference between

respondent views across ranks for roles revealed a statistical significance difference ($F(3, 153) = 10.801, p < .001$). A large effect size, $\eta^2 = .17$ was obtained and approximately 17% of the total variance in roles was accounted for by position. The Tukey-HSD post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.65.

Table 6.65: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for roles by position

Tukey HSDa,b				
Q7. What is your current position/rank?	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05		
		1	2	3
Superintended	65	3.2174		
Inspector	43	3.5539	3.5539	
Constable	35		3.8739	3.8739
Sergeant	14			4.0672

The mean for superintendents ($M = 3.22, SD = .66$) was significantly lower than the mean for constables ($M = 3.87, SD = .66$) and sergeants ($M = 4.06, SD = .65$). The mean for inspectors ($M = 3.55, SD = .70$) was significantly lower than the mean for sergeants ($M = 4.06, SD = .65$). The confidence interval error bars are shown in Figure 6.15.

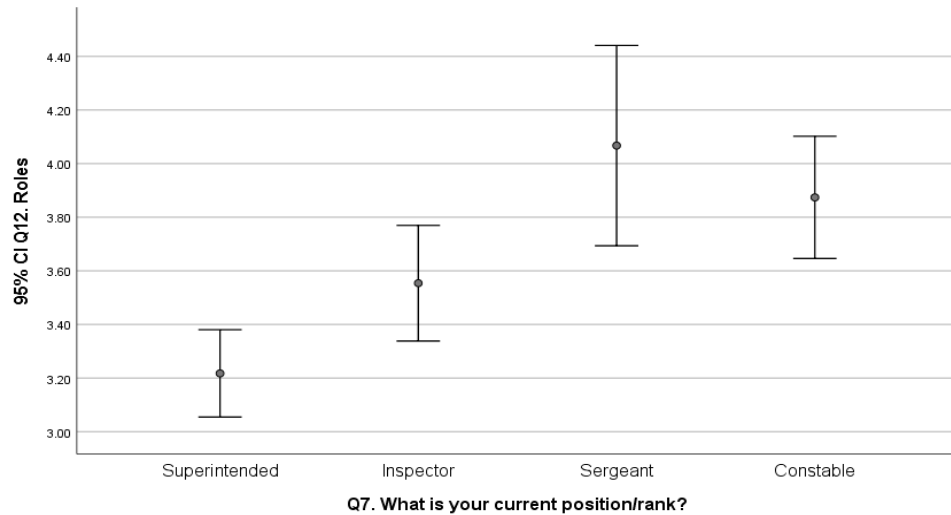


Figure 6.15: Confidence interval error bars for roles by position

The mean for superintendents was close to three indicating that the roles are functions and responsibilities of the metro police to some extent while for the constables and sergeants the mean was close to four indicating that the roles are functions and responsibilities of the metro police to a large extent. The ANOVA analysis of the difference between respondent views across ranks for crime prevention duration revealed a statistical significance difference ($F(3,153) = 2.927, p < .036$). A small effect size, $\eta^2 = .05$ was obtained and approximately about 5% of the total variance in crime prevention duration was being accounted for by rank. The Tukey HSD post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.66.

Table 6.66: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for crime prevention duration by position:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Q7. What is your current position/rank?N		Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
Superintendents	65	1.7018	
Inspector	43	1.8720	1.8720
Sergeant	14	2.3356	2.3356
Constable	35		2.4219

The mean for constables ($M = 2.42, SD = 1.35$) was significantly higher than the mean for superintendents ($M = 1.70, SD = 1.11$). The confidence interval error bars are shown in Figure 6.16.

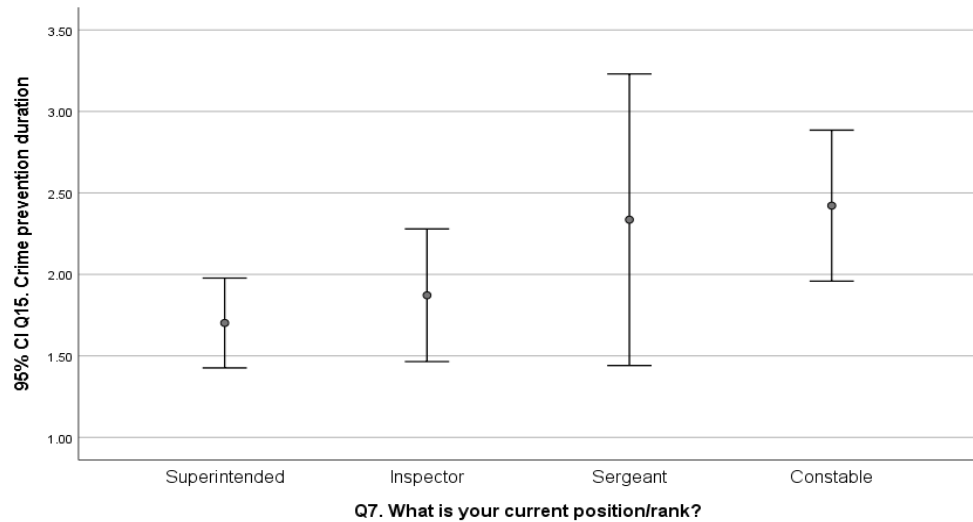


Figure 6.16 Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention duration by position

All means were close to two indicating that the crime prevention courses were done for approximately 2 – 3 months. Looking at Figure 6.16, it can be noted that the duration of the course seems to decrease with rank. The lower ranked officers seem to have training for a longer time as compared to the higher ranked officers. The Welch robust test of equality of means revealed that the effect of rank on crime prevention training was statistically significant ($Welch's F(3, 46.8) = 5.37, p = .003$). A moderate effect size of $\omega^2 = .08$ was obtained and approximately 8% of the total variance in crime prevention training was accounted for by rank. The Games-Howell post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.67.

Table 6.67: Games-Howell post-hoc tests for crime prevention training by position:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Q7. What is your current position/rank?	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
Superintendents	65	1.7362	
Inspectors	43	2.1144	2.1144
Sergeants	14	2.1583	2.1583
Constables	35		2.4415

The mean for superintendents ($M = 1.74, SD = .67$) was significantly lower than the mean for constables ($M = 2.44, SD = 1.00$). The confidence interval (CI) error bars are shown in Figure 6.17.

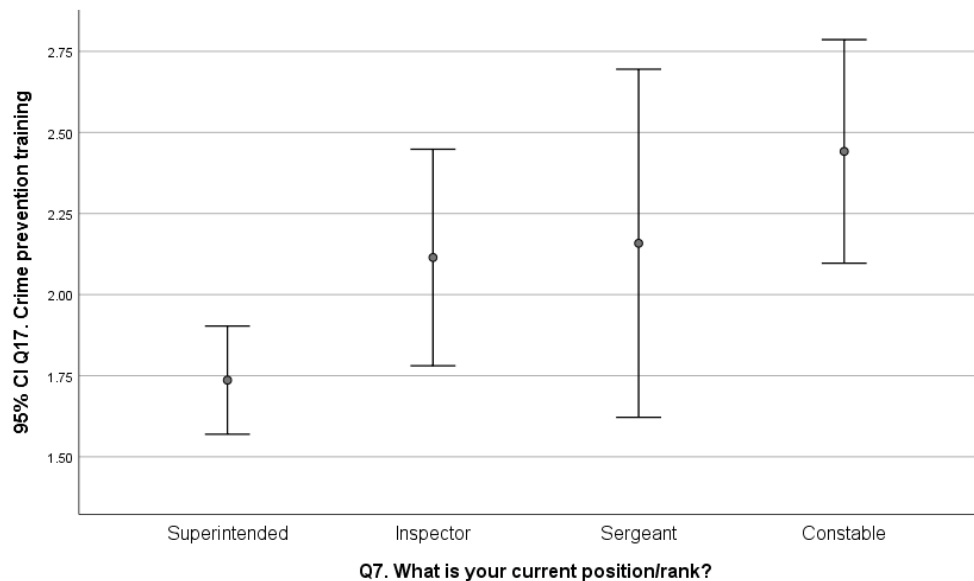


Figure 6.17: Confidence interval error bars for crime prevention training by position

All means were close to two indicating that the crime prevention training was occurring to a small extent. However, the level of extent tends to increase as the

rank decreases. The lower ranked officers seem to be having training to a higher extent as compared to higher ranked officers. The ANOVA analysis of the difference between respondent views across ranks for specialised services revealed a statistical significance difference ($(3,153) = 5.049, p = .002$). A moderate effect size, $\eta^2 = .09$ was obtained and approximately 9% of the total variance in specialised services was being accounted for by rank. The Tukey HSD post-hoc test results are summarised in Table 6.68.

Table 6.68: Tukey HSD post-hoc tests for specialised services by position:

Tukey HSDa,b			
Q7. What is your current position/rank?	N	Subset for alpha = 0.05	
		1	2
Sergeant	14	6.4286	
Superintended	65	8.2462	8.2462
Inspector	43	8.3256	8.3256
Constable	35		10.1714

The mean for sergeants ($M = 6.43, SD = 3.61$) was significantly lower than the mean for constables ($M = 10.17, SD = 2.78$). The confidence interval error bars are shown in Figure 6.18.

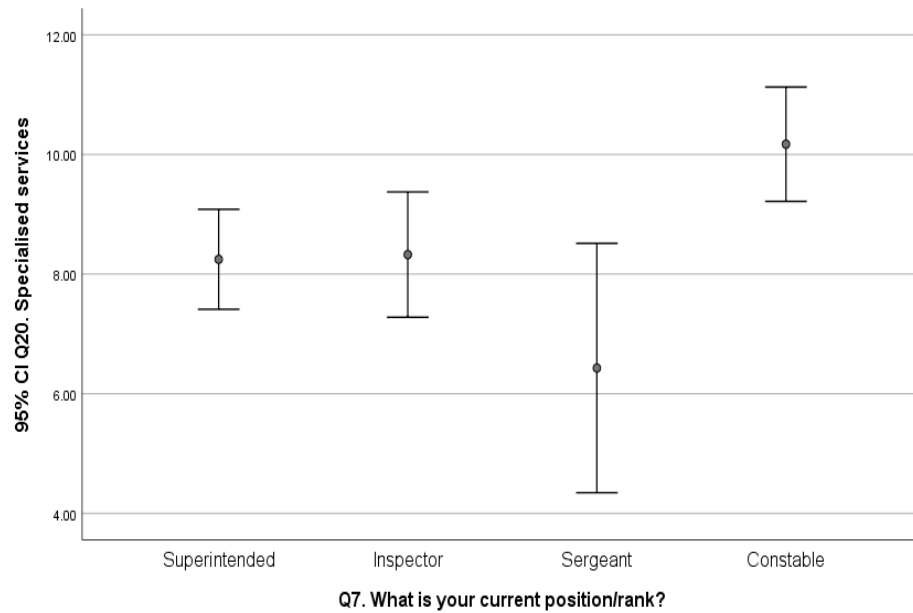


Figure 6.18: Confidence interval error bars for specialised services by position

The mean for constables was close to ten indicating that approximately ten out of the 14 specialised services can enable to combat and prevent crime effectively while the sergeants had a mean close to six indicating that approximately six out of the 14 specialised services can enable to combat and prevent crime effectively. Therefore, the sergeants indicated less than half of the mentioned specialised services could enable to combat and prevent crime effective.

6.11 CORRELATION ANALYSIS

The degree or extent of the relationship between the composite variables was performed using Pearson correlation coefficient. The analysis was performed at the 5% level of significance and the guidelines proposed by Cohen (1988) were used to interpret the correlations. According to Cohen (1988); an $r = .10 - .29$ its low effect (low correlation); $r = .30 - .49$ medium effect (moderate correlation) and $r = .50 - .99$ its large effect (strong correlation). The correlations between the composite variables are summarised in Table 6.69.

Table 6.69: Correlation between variables:

Item	Mean	SD	Q8	Q10	Q12	Q15	Q17	Q20a	Q20b	Q21	Q31
Q8. Barriers / obstacles	3.531	.851	-								
Q10. Solutions	4.007	.761	.412b**	-							
Q12. Roles	3.534	.727	.210**	.475b**	-						
Q15. Crime prevention duration	1.958	1.281	.154	.283**	.407b**	-					
Q17. Crime prevention training	2.0432	.28	.016	.071	.321b**	.489b**	-				
Q20. Resources	9.363	3.147	.082	.296**	.272**	.161*	.148	-			
Q20. Specialised services	8.563	3.394	.215**	.367b**	.284**	.070	.247**	.705b**	.-		
Q21. Additional powers and functions for metro police officers	4.132	.914	-.056	.101	-.099	-.069	-.197*	.147	.043	-	
Q31. Partnership roles	2.938	1.148	.146	.118	.369a**	.150	.340a**	.070	.138*	-.195**	-

*p < .05 statistically significant; ** p < .01 statistically highly significant

ar > .3 statistically significant (medium effect); br > 0.5 statistically significant (large effect)

Results from the correlation analysis showed that barriers / obstacles have a moderate positive correlation with solutions ($r = .412, p < .01$); a weak positive correlation with roles ($r = .210; p < .01$) and with specialised services ($r = .215; p < .01$) at the 5% level of significance. High values in barriers / obstacles associated with high values in solutions, roles and specialised services. It can be concluded that the barriers / obstacles seem to be aligned to solutions, that is, the solutions mentioned could address the barriers / obstacles. Solutions had a statistically significant moderate correlation with roles ($r = .475; p < .01$) and specialised services ($r = .367; p < .01$). Solutions also had a statistically significant weak positive correlation with crime prevention duration ($r = .283; p < .01$) and resources ($r = .296; p < .01$). High values in solutions are associated with high values in roles, specialised services, crime prevention duration and resources.

Roles had a statistically significant positive correlation with crime prevention duration ($r = .407, p < .01$), crime prevention training ($r = .321 p < .01$), resources ($r = .272; p < .001$), specialised services ($r = .284; p < .01$) and partnership roles ($r = .369, p < .01$). The correlation were of a medium, medium, small, small and medium effect respectively. High values in roles were associated with high values of crime prevention duration, crime prevention training, resources, specialised services and partnership roles. Crime prevention duration had a statistically significant moderate positive correlation with crime prevention training ($r = .489; p < .01$) and a weak statistically significant positive correlation with resources ($r = .161; p < .05$). High values in crime prevention duration are associated with high values in crime prevention training and resources. Crime prevention training had a statistically significant weak positive correlation with specialised services ($r = .247; p < .01$) and a weak statistically significant negative correlation with additional powers and functions for metro police officers ($r = -.197; p < .05$) and a statistically significant moderate positive correlation with partnership roles ($r = .340; p < .01$). High values in crime prevention training are associated with

high values in specialised services and partnership roles and low values in additional powers and functions for metro police officers.

Resources had a strong positive significant correlation with specialised services ($r = .705$; $p < .01$). The relationship is of a large effect. High values in resources are associated with high values in specialised services. The more the resources that enable to combat and prevent crime effectively, the more the specialised services. Additional powers and functions for metro police officers had a statistically significant weak negative correlation with partnership roles ($r = -.195$; $p < .05$). The correlation is of a small effect and high values in additional powers and functions for metro police officers are associated with low values in partnership roles. Those who advocated for additional powers for metro police seem not to be thinking of partnership roles.

6.12 SUMMARY

This chapter reported on the quantitative research findings and analysis of the data obtained using the survey questionnaire. The purpose of the study was to determine the role of MPS in crime prevention in metropolitan municipalities. The study dealt with six objectives which were to outline the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng Province; to investigate the effectiveness of the laws regulating the MPS in South Africa and determine the shortcomings relating to MPS in combating and preventing crime; to investigate different functions being provided by MPS that could be effective in preventing crime in Gauteng Province; to investigate powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in crime combating; to identify required resources and training that could effectively assist metro police officers in performing crime prevention role in Gauteng Province; and to provide recommendations based on research findings for the better crime reduction, combating, prevention and policing theory/model to deal with crime holistically between metro police services and SAPS in Gauteng Province. The study obtained

data from three municipalities, namely, Ekurhuleni, Johannesburg and Tshwane. The analysis was offered using descriptive statistics and inferential statistics. This chapter dealt with the measurement of the internal consistency reliability of the study using Cronbach alpha. The response rate of the study was then presented followed by the assessment of the validity of the instrument using exploratory factor analysis. Factor analysis was also done to determine whether items in a construct are measuring what they intended to measure by having items measuring the same issue being highly correlated.

CHAPTER 7: COMPARISON OF QUALITATIVE AND QUANTITATIVE RESEARCH FINDINGS

7.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter compares and integrates qualitative and quantitative research findings as they were outlined in previous chapters. The researcher focused on the research questions for this chapter. Where possible and where the responses were similar the researcher gave a clear picture of the findings and analysed the findings to interpret the results. It is important to note that the qualitative findings and quantitative findings were already analysed as presented in the previous chapters. In this chapter, the researcher narrowed the results by restricting them to the research question as outlined through the headings that feed into the research questions.

7.2 OBSTACLES HAMPERING CRIME PREVENTION ROLE OF METRO POLICE SERVICES

From both the qualitative and quantitative responses, the following common factors were mentioned by participants from top management and from operational level and they are not in any form of the popularity: lack of resources; political interference and influence; lack of power to store crime evidence and holding cells; lack of power to conduct crime prevention training; lack of power to establish crime prevention units and services; legislative restriction on metro police in crime prevention role; lack of investigative power; poor recruitment strategies for new members; publication of functions; poor relationship with SAPS and community; lack of proper cooperation with SAPS; poor recruitment, selection and promotion; poor in-service training; lack of signed metro police operational policies and plans; lack of good top management; legal restriction on crime prevention role of metro police; poor design of the cities; and corruption within the metro police.

It is clear that from both strategic and operational levels that the same responses came up. The same aspects to come up may be attributed to the continuous deliberations of the ongoing discussions engaged between the management and employees of metro police divisions. It may be that in their operational meetings with management, the same issues are mentioned. Hence, all the categories can identify the same issues throughout.

It may be concluded that various factors that are hampering metro police from combating crime effectively. These factors affect metro police in different ways. They indicate that there are some challenges in capacitating the officers through training to do their job and scarcity of resources in terms of tools of the trade at the operational level. There are also management roles in exacerbating challenges through poor management strategies and lack of accountability by management.

7.3 LEGAL SHORTCOMINGS AND NEGATIVE IMPACT CAUSED BY THIS OBSTACLES ON METRO POLICE CRIME PREVENTION ROLE

The combined qualitative and quantitative responses on the following mutual elements were mentioned by participants from strategic management and the respondents from operational level and they are not in any form of popularity: Lack of investigation powers; lack of power to have own municipal police holding cell; lack of authority to preserve and store evidence; lack of power to present crime prevention training; lack of power to defy political influence and interference; lack of legal division within metro police directorate; reviewing of criminal procedure Act; power to combat, reduce and prevent crime; power to work over municipal boundaries and jurisdiction; chief of police reporting to the executive mayor or city manager; and leaking of crime information plan.

It is clear that from both top-level and lower level that they noted the same responses. The reason for the same aspects to come up may be because of the number of cases dropped in a court of law where metro police members are arresting

an officer who failed to adhere to the rule of law. This could be because of lack of crime prevention and detective training. For example, metro police officer aborted to mark collected crime evidence, wrote incomplete arresting statement, or exercised maximum force when arresting a suspect. This may be ascribed by the fact that both categories can classify same problems.

7.4 DIFFERENT FUNCTIONS BEING PROVIDED BY METRO POLICE SERVICE IN CRIME PREVENTION

From both the qualitative and quantitative responses, the following common factors were mentioned by participants from top management and the respondents from operational level and they are not in any form of popularity: Road policing function; writing traffic fines; observing motor vehicle accidents; control and monitoring of road traffic flow; by-law enforcement function; confiscation of hawker's goods; attending of selling goods without license; attending noise complaint; inspection and checking of businesses licenses; common crime prevention function; arresting and detaining of a suspects; controlling of crowd in service delivery, unrest and strike situation; conducting perimeter and building patrols; conducting security risk assessments and security awareness campaigns; patrolling the streets and roads; CPTED function; protecting municipal buildings, assets and infrastructure function; social crime prevention function; land invasion function; dealing with service delivery and workers protests function; dealing with illegal mining function; and executing access control at access points.

It is evident that from both strategic level and operational level that the same responses were given. The reason for the same aspects to arise may be attributed to the fact that officers are daily conducting the same job as taught in their schooling institutions. The other reason may be that their senior management is giving them the same functions to perform as outlined in their metro police job profile and performance appraisals, hence all the categories are able to detect the same issues throughout.

7.5 POWERS AND RESPONSIBILITIES REQUIRED BY METRO POLICE TO BE EFFECTIVE IN CRIME PREVENTION

The combined qualitative and quantitative results produced the following common factors mentioned by respondents from top management and the participants from an operational level, and they are not in any form of popularity: the power to combat crime; power to investigate crime; power to have holding cells; power to preserve and store evidence; power to conduct crime prevention training; power to work beyond municipal borders; power to be independent in crime prevention; power to establish legal advisory unit within MPD; power to be independent from the political interference and influence; power to do stop and search; power to establish crime prevention unit; power to administer motor vehicle accidents; and power to conduct crime prevention operations independently.

It is clear that from both strategic level and operational levels the same responses came up. The reason for the same aspects to come up may be attributed to the fact that they are trained as traffic officers in terms of the NRTA which provides authorities and responsibilities to them to execute their powers in terms of the law. The other reason is that their powers in terms of the SAPS Act are limited to the traffic and by-Law enforcement as they are not allowed to combat crime in section 64 of SAPS Amendment Act, Hence all the categories are able to mention the same issues now and then.

7.6 DETERMINE THE LEVEL OF TRAINING WHICH IS APPROPRIATE FOR METRO POLICE

From both the qualitative and quantitative responses, the following common factors were mentioned by participants from top management and the respondents from operational level and, they are not in any form of popularity: crime prevention training; training provided by qualified and experienced instructors; investigation of crime training; new policing curriculum teaching; basic police training; good standard of police training; training in advance crime detecting technological devices;

standardised recruitment and selection criteria; firearm and ammunition training; visible policing training; municipal by-law enforcement training; radio procedure training; stop and search training; riot and crowd control training; crowd control training; crime prevention training; dockets training; social crime prevention training; preventive technique on police attacks; police tactical respond training; dangerous weapons training; police defensive technique training; high vehicle speed chase training; drug and nicotine identification training; drug and nicotine combating training; assets identification training; anticorruption course; crime intelligence training; police tracing and profiling training; rail and port crime prevention training; and respondents and rail and port crime prevention training.

It is clear that from both strategic level and operational levels indicated the same responses. The reason for the same aspects of training to come up may be attributed to the fact that both categories attended the same metro police training in a stipulated period of time and nothing different had come. The other reason is that this mentioned training above is not provided by the metro police academies since all categories feel that they are appropriate.

7.7 EVALUATION OF ADEQUATE RESOURCES AND SPECIALISED SERVICES IN THE MPD

The combined qualitative and quantitative responses have the common aspects mentioned by participants from top management and the respondents from operational level and, they are not in any form of popularity:

Resources needed: Vehicles; firearms and ammunitions; need of uniform; need of protective equipment; communication devices; tools of the trade; advance radio devices; advanced camera system; crime detectors devices; human resources; advance bullet-resistant vests; handcuffs and batons; special metal detector and scanner; adequate budget; training equipment; crime technological tracing devices;

qualified and experienced police instructors; good top management; and office space and equipment.

Specialised services

The purpose of this units was highlighted below as:

- Road Traffic Policing Unit: the unit is focusing on road traffic management and administration.
- By-Law Unit: Crime Prevention Unit; the unit deals with bylaw violations and complains to keep the city clean and compliant.
- VIP Protection Unit: The unit is deals with the protection and safeguarding of the Executive Mayor, Speaker of the Council and Mayoral Committee Members.
- Property or Asset Protection Unit: deals with the protection, safeguarding and securing of the city's assets, employees, properties, installations and critical infrastructure.
- Cable Theft Unit: deals with the safeguarding and protection of municipal electricity cables.
- Freeway Patrol Unit: deals with attending motor vehicle incidents and accidents happening only in the freeway
- Traffic Fine Tracing Unit: deals with the tracing and tracking motorists who failed to pay traffic fines and notices.
- Tactical Respond Unit: deals with responding on car hijacking, heist, business robbery and other schedule one offences.
- Crowd Control Unit: deals with the control of crowd especially during strike, marches and evacuations.
- Social Crime Prevention Unit: deals with the social crime prevention awareness, campaigns and teaching at schools, public places and churches.
- Land Invasion Unit: deals with eviction and prevention of people invading city's land, buildings and properties.

- Intelligence Gathering Unit: deals with the crime data collection and analysis for the purpose of advising MPS.
- Task Force Unit: deals with the special and joint crime prevention operations with the SAPS.
- Drug unit: deals with the individuals who are abusing and selling illegal drugs.
- K-9 Unit: deals with the crime patrolling and responding using dogs.
- Equestrian Unit: deals with the crime patrolling and responding using horses.

It is clear that from both strategic level and operational levels the same responses came up. The reason for the same aspects to come up may be attributed to the continuous lack of necessary resources to attend complaints and unable to combat crime owing to lack of crime prevention services/units. The reason is that complaint lodged by either operational members or members of community who are not satisfied by the police service to the political office or administration, or it may be that the same issues are mentioned by all.

7.8 RECOMMENDATIONS BASED ON THE FINDINGS FOR BETTER CRIME PREVENTION THEORIES AND MODERN POLICING MODELS

From both the qualitative and quantitative responses, there are common aspects of proposed recommendations outlined by participants from top management and the respondents from operational level where they are not in any form of popularity:

- Metro police to have power to investigate crime;
- Power to conduct crime prevention training;
- Power to provide crime prevention units, services and training;
- Set policing standard that is professional;
- Power to defy political influence and interference;
- Power to store and preserve evidence;
- Power to own accused holding cells and crime evidence storage;

- Develop municipal police service act that provides powers and functions to the MPS;
- Metro police have adequate resources;
- Metro police have qualified and experienced police instructors at their academies;
- Reviewing and implementing metro police promotion, recruitment and selection criteria;
- Encourage and intensify good relationship with SAPS;
- Form metro police legal advisory unit;
- Involve community participation in crime prevention by developing ward base policing system.
- Conduct up-to-date in-service police training;
- Draft new policing regulation that will give additional powers and functions to the metro police on crime prevention;
- Have a clear separation of powers between metro police and SAPS;
- Have metro police skills development program on policing standards, behaviours, discipline, interpersonal and attitude management;
- control over metro police by a well-trained top metro police executive; and
- Have a National Chief of Metro Police.

It is clear that from both top management level and operational level that the same responses came up. The reason for the same aspects to arise may be attributed to the fact that these proposed solutions are suggested during their constant police sessions, meetings and executive meetings held within the department. It may be that in their operational meetings with management, the same issues are suggested and proposed. Hence all the different categories are able to select the same themes throughout.

7.9 SUMMARY

This chapter dealt with the comparison of the qualitative and quantitative research findings and analysis. The responses and analysis results of the selected participants by the researcher were noted and elaborated in detail. Furthermore, the results were briefly analysed to get the clear intended research aim and objective. The respondent's views as obtained from the field were identified and evaluated by the researcher to try to make a sense and collaborated means that deliver the best policing ideology that can help police system at operational and management level. This chapter brought the detailed analysis of qualitative, quantitative research findings from the responses about specific research questions. It was also important for the researcher to analyse the results from the participant's perspective. This was precisely to bring an understanding of different opinions of selected participants' conceptual content as outlined. The research findings in this chapter were packaged with the suggested recommendations and solutions by the participants and supported by the author to assist the metro police division in successfully exercising crime reduction.

CHAPTER 8: RECOMMENDATIONS AND CONCLUSION

8.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter presents the recommendations and conclusion of this research study in detail founded on the collected and composed data. The chapter also confirms that research objectives and questions drawn were considered. Several suggested solutions to the research questions and objectives are also outlined in this chapter. The summary or conclusion of this study is also explained in detail about all presented chapters.

8.2 RECOMMENDATIONS

Recommendations of this study were made based on the findings of the study. It is therefore recommended as follows:

8.2.1 Provision of optimal police resources

It is recommended that metro police should be provided critical police resources such as vehicles, tools of the trade, crime combating training, skills development and leadership to enable metro police officers to conclude their daily policing duties. Adequate and accurate budget distribution to the metro police divisions will assist in enhancing the directorate with required monetary fiscal powers to secure and buy desirable policing resources to deal with criminal activity at the local level of government.

This resource plays a major role the of existence of MPS in quest of delivering safety and security mandates. Appointed leaders should strategically plan their policing mission around adequate allocated resources to fulfil their policing directive in the local council.

8.2.2 Defiance of political interference, influence, and intervention

There should be defiance order – command through enacted legislation that discourages politicians from interfering and influencing policing function, operation and administration. The drafting of the rule of law that gives guidance on responsibilities expected from individual politicians assigned to the metro police division as oversight appointee will assist to avoiding political interference and influence. There should be a review or amendment of section 206 of the Constitution of South Africa as politicians have misinterpreted this section of the law.

This constitutional section allows political interventions in the cooperates and institutional administration to intervene on operational issues of institutional democracy. Politicians are no longer interfering but instead are influencing and making administration changes to suit their political aspirations.

8.2.3 Relieving legislative limitations on crime prevention position of metro police

Metro police division allowed to collect crime evidence, establish crime prevention service, units and conduct crime prevention educational training. Metro police should have powers to investigate cases and train the police on crime combating models within the municipal jurisdiction. This will allow metro police minimize the heavy burden of criminal cases in the hands of SAPS that end up struck off the roll owing to lack of evidence.

These powers will enable metro police to launch crime prevention operational activities during festive seasons without seeking permission from SAPS commissioner as dictated by the SAPS Act. It will further authorise MPS to own their police cells or detentions rooms, establish fingerprint unit, own crime detection devices and crime exhibits storage facilities, to appoint their own forensic and crime expert, to own crime forensic laboratories and crime verification centres. All these will ensure that municipal states hold its critical institutions than what is happening

in the SAPS where they have outsourced crime forensic and recording centre to the private person as a consultant.

8.2.4 Provision for crime prevention training

There should be a crime prevention programmes with the appropriate curriculum which empower metro police officers with relevant crime prevention skills and lessons such as police crime reduction technique, crime pattern, hotspot identifications, crime statistical collection, task force team exercise, and investigation of crime courses. More importantly, these crime prevention programmes will equip metro police officers with accurate crime combating skills and knowledge to deal with ever-increasing city criminal activities. It will further provide the city council police's authority with required global policing standard on police training, skills, criteria, curriculum, overt and covert crime data collection, selecting of crime evidence, protection, declaration of a crime scene, profiling of dangerous suspects and understanding of criminal behaviours.

8.2.5 Orderly recruitment and promotional system

There should be a structured and up-to-date approved staffing policy in the metro police's promotional and strategic recruitment drive, which is professionally driven and intended to clean maladministration in the metro police recruitment system. There should be recruitment and promotional strategic plans that are reviewed after every specified time (example – 5 years) deemed in the metro police division intended to enhance and capacitate metro police members in the organisational structures. This recruitment strategy should table its envisioned objectives, purpose and contents evolving around all promotional and advertised positions which is aligned with the tertiary qualifications, policing experience and skills for members before appointment.

8.2.6 Avoiding police duplications on functions

There should be avoidance by metro police and SAPS in working on the same policing duties such as attending or observing of motor vehicle accidents and arresting of drunk and driving offenders. This responsibility should be allocated to the metro police because they are authorised in terms of the road traffic law to be responsible for roads and streets policing. They should further allow metro police division to manage all related motor vehicle fatalities and accidents investigation. It will assist state to group and split different crime categories according to allocated specific law enforcement agencies. The land invasion policing and illegal mining should also be in the ride of the metro police or municipal policing structure. These illegal mining and lands occupations are contravening city council by-laws owned by the respective cities. This will be better positioned in terms of control and administration; hence, municipalities are the owners of the land.

8.2.7 Implementation of same shift systems in the SAPS and metro police

There should be the exact implementation of shift systems in the SAPS and metro police across the board. These will assist in strengthening and complementing the quest to align required police resources, plans, controls, and management intended to curb crime as combined law enforcers. This will also deal with anticipated delays in managing crime-related matters, incidents, and complaints reported to metro police units and SAPS. It will also advance the work relation between the two strategic law enforcement entities in the land.

8.2.8 Cooperation persistence among metro police and SAPS

There should be a constant strive for good and constant working relationship between metro police and SAPS in South Africa. This will assist these primary law implementors in bringing together different police resources such as skills, experience, workforce and adequate resources together to share common ground.

Metro police and SAPS will ensure that society gets relevant lessons, awareness and crime combating campaigns which are driven together. This will further ensure that community or individual people understand the role of metro police and SAPS in crime prevention by with them daily.

8.2.9 Connection on design of the cities

There should be a connection and interlink among neighbouring cities to allow metro police officers to work together from different metropolitan municipalities. The city's plan should be in the sense that they recognize regional crime patterns, link and hotspots from city-to-city. Metro police officers should be allowed to discharge their policing functions further and empowered as such so long as they are within the perimeters of the law.

8.2.10 Curb corruption in the city policing system

There should be a standing developed corruption prevention policy and strategic plan in place within all structures of the metro police. In the light of the corruption prevention policy, metro police will advance corruption plan that gives hints on what needs to be done and not mention the consequences for failure to comply with corruption plan and procedure. This corruption prevention strategy should deal with any emerging and anticipated corruption signs in the metro police directorate. It is critical to have a corruption prevention plan that allows everyone to report maladministration and misrepresentation without fear or favours; for example, a tollfree number where people can be handled unanimously.

8.2.11 Provision of social crime prevention in the early childhood line

There should be instructional social will in the crime prevention strategy to allow officers to present crime awareness to developing children. There should be schooling education and learning reminding minor children on consequences of

criminal activities and its implications to the offenders. It is essential that particular livelihoods and conduct of individuals be influenced at early ages to avoid them resorting to crime, drugs and violence as a way of life.

8.2.12 Permit metro police to investigation of crime

Metro police should have full legal powers and authority to investigate crime within their respective determined jurisdiction. There should be a specific list of crime categories clustered to be investigated by the metro police departments such as motor vehicle accidents, reckless and negligent driving, drink and driving and other motor-vehicle related cases.

More importantly, metro police units should acquire investigation courses to teach and educate them how to deal with crime investigation. This will assist the metro police directorate fully become responsible and accountable to their own made arrests, collect relevant crime data, and present it for trial in the court of law.

8.2.13 Allow metro police to have police holding cells

Metro police should have powers to own municipal police holding cells to secure and safeguard arrested suspects. This will ensure that metro police officers, after arresting accused suspects, they start with securing them, obtaining statements, securing crime scene with the intention of advancing docket for prosecutions. This will also ensure that they present and preserve them to the court of law without delays.

8.2.14 Authorise metro police to preserve crime evidence in a court of law

Metro police should have the power to preserve crime evidence in their own certified forensic storage facilities. This will ensure that they guard against any attempt to foul, contaminate and destruct collected crime exhibits from the crime scene and

enquiry. This will strengthen and speed up the pace of the wheels of justice in the evidence collection side by other authorities.

8.2.15 Empower metro police to present crime prevention training

Metro police should be approved in legislation to present crime prevention and combating education to their metro police officers. This will allow the crime prevention and combating intention of metro police to be equipped with the necessary crime reduction skills and knowledge to conclude crime combating objectives in the municipality. Among other crime prevention skills that should be taught will be search and seizure procedures, crime investigation training, crime reaction technique, basic police training, crime detection training, control of hardcore criminals and special task team courses.

8.2.16 Establishment of legal division within metro police directorate

There should be a metro police legal advisory division as per the structure of the municipal police service. This unit should assist metro police officers in interpreting and providing of operational law contents as per their respective legislations. This unit will provide skills development for all new and senior officers on using and interpreting legislation in context.

8.2.17 Revising of Criminal Procedure Act No. 51 of 1977

There should be an amendment and review in the contents of Criminal Procedure Act so that it is aligned with the prescripts of the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa. This will assist the police to apply its contents correctly and intended objectives precisely when executing their crime combating programmes. The standing interpretation of the Criminal Procedure Act now is misleading in the policing units as it is not in line with the prescripts of the Constitution. This legislation

is 44 years old, and some of its contents are not promoting the intentions of SAPS Act and the Constitution.

8.2.18 Authorise metro police to combat, reduce and prevent crime

Metro police should have independent power in terms of newly drafted legislation to combat, prevent and reduce crime within their area of operation. Like SAPS, they should be able to establish crime combating strategies, services and procedures operations as directed by the newly drafted legislation in the area of their functions and responsibilities.

8.2.19 Work beyond municipal boundaries and jurisdictions

There should be memorandum of understanding among the municipalities to allow metro police officers to work beyond their appointment area. This will enable officers to deal with motor vehicle accidents, reckless driving and motor vehicle violations experienced by respective metro police officials while driving state vehicles.

8.2.20 Chief of police reporting to newly appointed National Municipal Police Chief

There should be an appointment of national municipal police chief responsible and in charge of all established municipal police departments. These top police officer should be in the national government department which looks into the policing issues within the metropolitan municipalities. This should allow smooth management and control of policing operations and administration without political interference by councillors and promote service delivery intention through effective and efficient timeline deliveries.

8.2.21 Improve metro police organisational structure and setup

There should be one unilateral national metro police organisational structure that is in line with the policing demands and needs of municipal areas. The organisational structure with relevant resources and skills to advance metro police objective in a respective municipality will be important. The metro police organisational structure should recognise the significant meaning of preventing, reducing and controlling crime at local level since they are in the forefront of the service delivery level of government.

8.2.22 Protection of metro police information and data

There should be a signed protection of information policy document and a plan to deal with the leaking of organisational information and data. This will assist in managing the organisational intellectual information and organisational property data from being misused by employees and any other person who is supposed not to.

8.2.23 Protecting municipal assets, properties and infrastructure

Metro police should protect and safeguard municipal assets and buildings as part of their functions and responsibilities in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa. They should be part of their legislated responsibility in the By-law Enforcement Act to protect city council assets. Furthermore, metro police officers should be afforded the chance to fully conclude security risk analysis, audits, risk evaluation, crime awareness and campaigns. Suppose metro police afforded this crime prevention role. In that case, they will be able to identify crime risks, security weaknesses and vulnerabilities and immediately provide suggested security measures that will be suitable to curb a specific crime risk as anticipated.

8.2.24 Permit metro police to deal with land invasion and crowd control role

Metro police should be empowered to deal with people who cause disruptions especially during the protesting strikers and land invaders. This will allow municipality to defend their assets and resources. Hence, these strikers are damaging them during protests. It will also allow them to plan how to deal with service delivery commotions caused during remonstrations and violent demonstrations. Metro police colleges should be allowed in terms of the law to provide necessary crowd control training to enable them in dealing with unruly marchers and land invaders.

8.2.25 Permit metro police to deal with illegal mining

Metro police should be given powers to deal with a crime involving illegal miners around their municipal jurisdictions. This will allow metro police to deal with unlawful mining as part of the daily functions and responsibilities in preventing, combating and reducing crime. Metro police, if allowed, will be able to design strategies on how to combat illegal mining.

8.2.26 Have extra power to prevent and combat crime

Metro police should be given powers to prevent and combat crime as appointed in terms of SAPS Act, which must include combating crime and preventing, and developing crime combating policy, strategies, and procedures in the metropolitan cities. Metro police is appointed in terms of the amended SAPS Act of 1998 with limitations on their crime prevention role. They should be allowed to combat, prevent and control crime wholly within the municipal council of their operation.

8.2.27 Supply of crime prevention equipment and crime detection aids

There should be a provision of crime detection equipment to empower members with necessary crime combating apparatus to detect, delay, deter, and stop crime. This crime combating tools will speedup crime detecting mechanisms for metro

police officer in using technology to track and trace criminals. Metro police must be able to use crime detection aids and techniques in this century to deal with crime. There should be ongoing in-service job training and skills development on the use of speed chase apparatus and how to deter a possible stolen vehicle using specific equipped camera devices during the patrols.

8.2.28 Provision of crime prevention units and services

There should be a signed law and standards that allow metro police to form crime prevention and combating units such as Crime Intelligence Unit, Detective Unit, Crime Statistics Unit, Tactical, Murder and Robbery Unit, Crime Reaction and Prevention Unit. These units and services will assist the SAPS in managing and controlling crime within the local council authority. These metro police units and services will also help the community alleviating crime by establishing policing services in the local level of government. Metro police officers should be allocated a specific area of the community-dwelling to coordinate and liaise with public members on issues involving crime and reporting.

They should be legalised to accomplish drug-seeking operations and allowed in terms of the law to control and manage crime operations on their own without getting instructions from SAPS.

8.2.29 General recommendations

- The media fraternity should play an element of regulatory role in policing the police sector as oversight partner to manage police corruption, maladministration, and poor police performance. Media should be allowed to provide feedback on outstanding crime-related safety and security issues in the policing arena. This will ensure that cases are not just wrapped under the floor without consequence management. Media will have their way of picking and

upping issues on which clear feedback was not provided, or the issue not dealt with correctly.

- Members of the community should be allowed to participate in crime prevention in the metro police structures like in the SAPS. This will strengthen the crime prevention quest in the local level of authority since metro police operate in the service delivery line of the city council.

8.3 APPLICABLE CITIZEN INVOLVEMENT POLICING MODEL

Having studied many existing crime prevention models from the diverse criminal combating contexts the researcher based on collected data analysis has systematic representation of Applicable Citizen Involvement Policing Models (ACIPM) as discussed in detail in the next section:

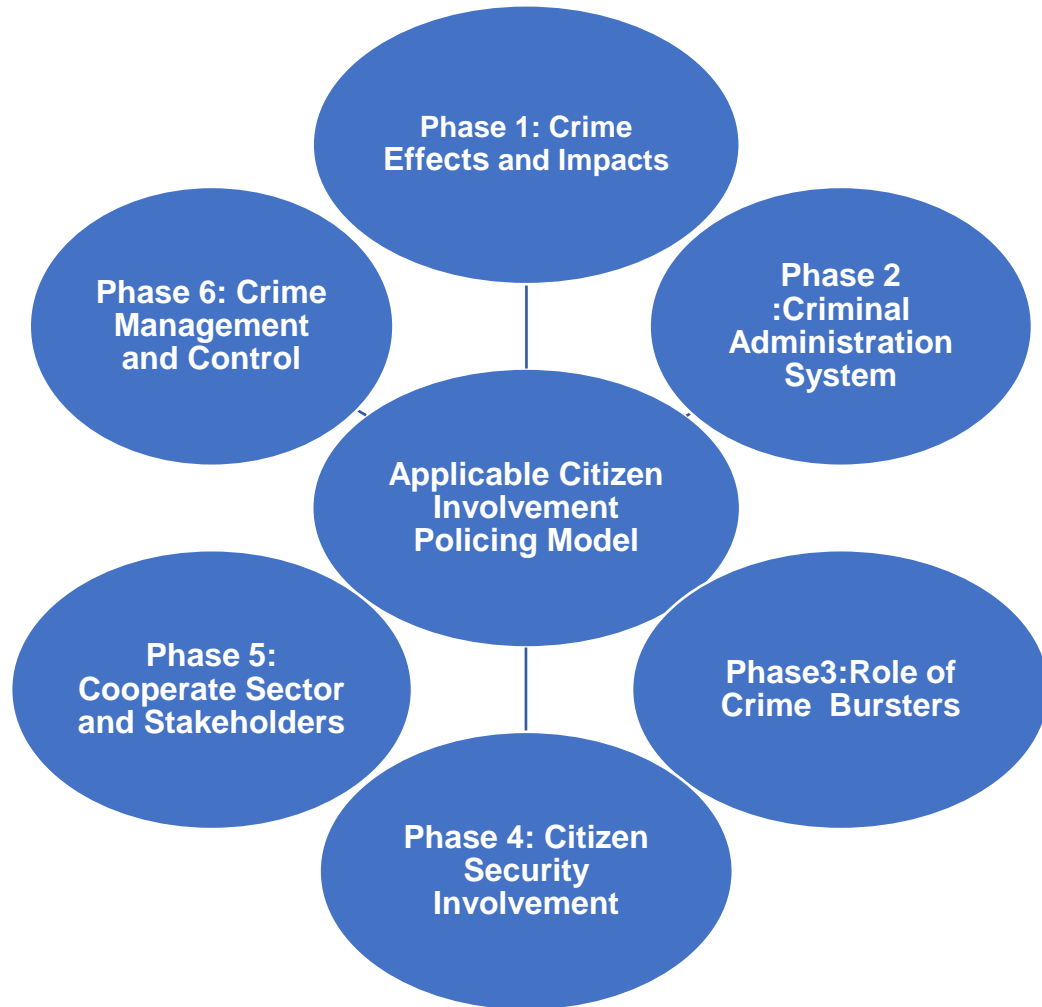


Figure 8.1: Applicable Citizen Involvement Policing Model

A detailed discussion on the suggested Applicable Citizen Involvement Policing Model is presented in the next sections:

Phase 1: Crime Effects and Impacts

Emerson (2020:529) indicates that the effects as a result of people looting and destroying buildings, industries and shopping malls has a detrimental impact on economic, social, physical and health security of the country. The effects of crime in communities, families and the entire neighbourhood will cause fear and uncertainty of future developments, food and better life for all. Is very upsetting in South African streets to see how criminals have overpowered the police by taking full control in our communities (Rogers, 2006:131). In the same vein, Commins (2018:4) stipulates that the effects of crime can be prompted by unemployment to the youth, inequality, poverty, lack of sports grounds, no streets lightings and poor crime reduction support structure from the authorities. The impacts of these criminal elements stay deep in the minds of citizens whereby they end up searching for a better life by forcefully expropriating or destroying someone's belongings and assets without permission (Burger & Muller, 2009:4).

The point of departure in these crime effects and impacts could be triggered by the lack of proper crime combating structures involving citizen, community and cooperate sectors. It could be further perpetuated by lack of policing resources due to poor policing models or unnecessary political influence on the South African Police Division (Bayley, 2006:2). The rise of severe and offensive criminal elements in society has left community members with no option but to devise other constructive means of protecting themselves (Fisher, 2007:1). This had a good impact on the safety and security programme setup by people living in the same neighbourhood vicinity, resulting in a system that controls and prevents crime. The role played by community members, business cooperate, and ordinary citizen should get required necessary support from SAPS as the only crime controlling custodian.

The effects of looting and destruction of important economic, social and environmental infrastructure will be devastating as caused by organised criminal syndicates and opportunistic individuals if the criminal administration system is not locking its doors (Emmerson, 2020:529). The role play by the criminal justice system in dealing with crime effects and impacts need to be of the highest level before the community and thieves take the law into their hands. Strong criminal justice and administration systems serving the majority of people without fear or favour need to be revitalized in terms of resources as mandated by the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa of 1996 to deal with any anticipated crime threats which are outlined next.

Phase 2: Criminal Administration System

The Constitution outlines that national police have powers to administer criminal elements, activities, and behaviour in the country in a quest to strive for order. It is upon the South African policing system to ensure better crime records, reports, cases and documentation to assist in the prosecution and sentencing of the accused suspects as enshrined in the SAPS Act. Kole (2015:152) asserts that after the new dawn of democracy the government decided to strengthen and complement the policing service by establishing the MPS and private security industry to practice the crime prevention mandate with limited legal frame. These two crime busters operate within the thin line of authority in their pursuit to crack the administration of different crime pattern, statistics and identification while on duty.

The above intention, the state drafted NCPS of 1996 encourages every governmental department, municipal council and private sectors to be involved in the mission of crime prevention by introducing opportunities that promotes crime free environment (Burger, 2011:103). This initiative to the SAPS to ensure that crime statistics, reports, cases, and concerns are administered in the policing system to guide police operations in the near future. Metro police, private security, business

sector and members of the public are also required to be recorded in the policing crime reduction structures and forums to work with the national police in combating crime.

Phase 3: Role of Crime Busters

South African Police Division: Section 205 of the Constitution summarises the order of ensuring that peace, justice and harmony in the land is within the jurisdiction of the SAPS. In the same vein, SAPS Act mentions the powers and functions of the police service as to fight, stop, diminish and control criminal actions which the criminals and ordinary citizens perpetuate. Police were further instructed to secure and safeguard citizens properties against any illegal intention to cause damage, harm or injury. The SAPS Act further allowed through enactment formal Parliament legislation regulation processes the community members to be part of preventing and reducing of crime within the municipalities.

South African National Defence Force: Section 200 (2) of the Constitution preserves that the defence force of South Africa is entrusted with the power to protect the people and their borders. The defence force is also permitted in conjunction with police after a formal written instruction by the president to maintain law and order. This was evident from 26 March 2020 in South Africa where defence force members were deployed in various provinces in the country to back up the police in enforcing lockdown regulations after the outbreak of COVID-19 pandemic and recently during mass looting in some parts of Gauteng and Durban. In collaboration with police and other prominent law enforcement partners, the defence force is very effective controlling, stopping and searching motorists during the past years of COVID-19 pandemic.

Municipal Police Service Department: According to Rauch, et al. (2001:3), the metro police directorate in South Africa were formed to support and reinforce the SAPS divisions in their quest to secure, safeguards, protect and manage crime

within the streets of the municipalities. In contrast, Montesh (2011:9) stipulates that there are numerous unclear tasks to be performed by the municipal police in assisting the national police in crime prevention which relates to their limitations of power to combat crime; unauthorised conclusion of crime prevention training, unit, service and operations; lack of authority in investigating crime; lack of permission to collect crime evidence and no power in securing the suspected accused in their municipal premises.

In this spectrum, whereby municipal police division were assigned the crime prevention responsibility without necessary powers and authority (Kole, 2015:156). This notion above was supported by Madihlaba (2018:3) that the current governing party did not make a clear crime prevention mandate of metro police, especially in their support to SAPS.

The researcher notes that metro policing division in South Africa depend on Criminal Procedure Act No. 51 of 1977 to effect arrests, search suspects and conduct general policing functions such as patrols. Municipal police should have been allowed to fully conduct crime prevention like SAPS because they operate within the local sphere of government under SAPS Amendment Act. Municipal police have the necessary resources to enable every crime-fighting stakeholder within the community to be involved in crime reporting, reduction and management because they operate where members of society dwell.

Municipal police should further be allowed to independently form the part of Citizen Policing Involvement Model in combating crime by physically being part of crime prevention clusters and structures. Metro police officials should be assigned to a specific residential ward base area and sector to engage with society on the importance of reporting, containing and identifying act of violence. Therefore, metro police division should be the effective utilized as a centre of crime information system because they operate in the service delivery line.

Private Security Companies: The SAPS Ministry through the rule of law has managed to regulate private security companies through enactments of Private Security Industry Regulation Act No. 56 of 2001 (PSIRA). In support of the above notion, Minnaar and Ngoveni (2004:43) mention that government authority decided to allow thorough presentation of the private security officers to secure, protect the people and their asset in South Africa.

The Act also allows the security companies to conduct measurable crime prevention mandates such as patrols, search and seizure in a chosen location through a signed memorandum of understanding from the client. Metro police and SAPS should involve security companies deployed in a specific housing or shopping complex to form part of their crime prevention cluster tool. This can also introduce homeowners and shopping gurus to be part of very complex crime combating system with resources to share into the identified hotspots. According to Kole (2015: 158), private security officers are playing important partnership policing whereby they use their own closed circuit camera systems, intruder alarm devices and own patrol vehicles to monitor and control access to determined dwelling areas against criminals.

Phase 4: Citizen Security Involvement

According to Burger (2011:103), NCPS of 1996 allows a citizen to be involved in crime reduction, combating and control through a formal established citizen policing involvement crime prevention model. Choi and Lee (2016:174-179) mention that the citizen policing involvement model has succeeded in the Latin American places where public opinion on how to deal with ever increasing criminal activities happening in society were considered. Criminal activities such as murder, theft, robbery, rape, and other serious offences were initially noted to be on a high in Mexico, Central and Southern America which was subsequently controlled successfully by the involvement of citizen security in crime management system.

Similarly, Darchen and Simon (2018:3) reflect that as the crime rates soared in South American countries like Argentine Republic, the use of citizens to secure their own asset and putting safety measures in their live became paramount. Here in South Africa citizen security is permitted in terms of the SAPS Act which directs citizen policing involvement through the development of a community policing plan containing structural guidelines to be followed when dealing with matters intended to discourage crime within the community. The same notion was cited in the White Paper on Safety and Security of 1998 which encourages all spheres of government to involve their citizens in crime reduction done the leadership of the SAPS.

Citizens involved in crime prevention will provide policing with necessary crime information data and analysis which will prevent future and anticipated criminal element (Burger, 2011:103). The SAPS administrators should give citizen necessary communication support in the form of a dedicated method system planted in the nearest police station to raise alarms when crime is happening. Citizens should be directly permitted to be directly involved with nearest South African policing structure by personally patrolling with police and assist in effecting arrests. This can be done by nominating society representatives to partner with police officers in a particular sector and ward base to ensure that criminal activities are reported, prevented, and stopped (Palimiotto, 2011:215).

Phase 5: Corporate Sector and Stakeholders

The cooperation industry performs the crime reduction part in the arrangements of their shopping, industrial and residential complexes is very critical. The cooperate world could inject necessary security resources in the form of access control system, installed camera systems, intruder alarms and deployed armed security response team in quest to combat crime (Kole, 2015:102). It is noted that business banking system has been hit hard by the act of violence and corruption whereby criminals using computer technology in phishing necessary data to be used for self-benefit. Similarly, Bressler (2009:6) mentions that business cooperates play a fundamental

position in providing optimal resources to the municipal police, national police and Traffic policing in the management of their crime reduction objective.

This is also witnessed in South African big cities, especially in Gauteng Province, where OUTsurance provides necessary motorcycles and trained point manned citizens to control traffic during peak hours (Palmiotto, 2011:328). The cooperate sector and other stakeholders should be considered by SAPS administration as critical custodian of crime prevention and be included within the crime combating management spectrum by giving them clear specific terms as per the SAPS Act.

In a recent business initiative on crime reduction development in South Africa, it was learned that the cooperate sector formed their own crime initiative model called Business Against Crime South Africa in 2013. In this model line, all businesses, and other stakeholders such as municipal police, citizen and private security were encouraged to work with businesspeople to stop crime. We saw through this crime initiative the business sector providing necessary crime information figures and resource in the form of cars and security budget to control crime in a specific industrial area.

Phase 6: Crime Management and Control

The Constitution has assigned SAPS the duty to keep safe, protect and secure the environment and their people. Upon unleashing this responsibility, they must seat in the boardroom and draft the strategic crime control management plan to realize this mammoth task. In pursuit of this role SAPS has to rob in different partners to assist in controlling and managing criminal elements (Plant & Scott, 2009:32). Against this background, the policing sector developed a number of critical regulations and policies to enable them to involve different stakeholders in crime prevention.

They are four crime management and control arrangement suggested by the researcher in the form of the following impressions:

Crime Containment planning: The National Crime Prevention Strategy of 1996 allows the police to seat down with citizen and other community members in developing crime prevention structures, plans and directives involving all parties (Palmiotto, 2011:328). In contrast, Kole (2011:83) mentions that the crime reduction plan should focus in resolving identified crime risks, analysing the crime risks, counselling the risk through provision of necessary resources from different stakeholder perspective, mitigating by defining the specific roles and providing control by giving regular feedback to ensure that the process is managed adequately.

It is crucial to align crime prevention plans with the strategic objectives of the SAPS which is to protect, safeguard and secure assets of the people. Bressler (2009:6) mentions that to plan correctly in dealing with crime within the society police should involve every citizen and other community stakeholders in the initial phases. Containment of crime should be attended in the first phase of strategic crime reduction planning by providing role effort on structure and workforce to be performed by specific individuals daily.

Organisational structure: The SAPS organisational structure should be able to deal with the workload, activities and aspects in the ground by allocating necessary resource to attain crime prevention role. According to Poulin and Nemeth (2005:272), the ability to unleash crime reduction and management systems by the SAPS will need necessary resources in the form of personnel and vehicles from different stakeholders, citizens and private security sectors.

There are funds in the hands of external organisational structures such as municipal police, corporate sector, citizens, security and community that can be used to support the national police in the quest to control crime in the streets (Kole, 2015:160). Policing organisational structure should be extended with specific legal mandate accommodating other stakeholders in crime management through the enactment of the strategic objective. Members of the community, security guards

and other stakeholders are critical in assisting SAPS organization in managing crime.

Leading the pack: SAPS have all privileges and bragging rights to lead all stakeholders in controlling and managing crime as per the SAPS Act. They must ensure that crime combating strategic plan and interventions are implemented where they feel there are gaps, optimal resources be organized from different stakeholder perspective to enable them to prevent crime. On the other hand, national police should involve municipal police and citizens to monitor all policing process, systems, and models to check which one fulfils the intended crime reduction and combating mandate. The critical part of this enforcement process is for the SAPS to lead citizen and other stakeholders on critical crime reduction decisions that do not compromise the intended objectives.

Control of Crime Reduction Process: According to Bullock and Telley (2003:147), the total management and control of crime is one part that police are doing it wrongly and unprofessionally. There are many civil and criminal litigation deposited into the head of the political ministry of police owing to poor policing actions in controlling crime. The management of criminal record centre, crime reporting data, criminal evidence centres and interference by the policing ministry into the policing administration and management of police (Montesh, 2011:9). The lack of support structure to the municipal police to prevent crime, lack of conducive citizen reporting system and poor relationship with business cooperate is creating a hell of problems to control crime in South Africa (Madihlaba, 2018:3). It should be the mandate of national police to ensure that all stakeholders are invited and encouraged into a crime prevention seminar that will suggest a crime prevention way forward, strategy and model to be used in deal with crime. This crime reduction plans, and management control process should involve citizen, security, police and business cooperate.

8.4 ADDITIONAL RESEARCH CONDUCTED

To support and strengthen the findings and recommendations of this research study, there is a need for further research study to be conducted into the benefits that the municipal police could bring if given authority and relevance within policing system. This could assist South African system in improving crimefighting spirit in the communities and could apply in other southern, western and northern parts of Africa as better model in policing crime. The other research can be conducted to determine the relevancy of metro policing as police department rather than traffic authority as it creates derailing legal and social perceptions revolving their existence in the South African policing context.

8.5 SUMMARY

In conclusion, this research study looked into the following chapters as outlined as follows:

Chapter 1: General Orientation

It dealt with introducing the policing role in the global, national and local level of government. It further highlighted the responsibilities and influences entrusted to the policing fraternity, particularly, the metro police department.

Chapter 2: Research Methodology

It outlined the research methodology used by the researcher in obtaining the relevant data and information to conclude this study.

Chapter 3: Literature Review

It highlighted the role and responsibility which is supposed to be played by the metro police services in crime prevention as outlined by different scholars. It further mentioned the obstacles that hamper the crime prevention role of metro police in South African operational context as compared to other state entities.

Chapter 4: Legislative and Theoretical Framework

This chapter explained the legislative parts that conclude the relevance and uncertainty of metro police division within crime bursting system. It also outlined different crime combating theories and models that are applied in the whole world including South Africa.

Chapter 5: Qualitative Research Findings

It presented the qualitative research findings using one-on-one interviews with the selected respondents by the researcher. It represented the views, aspirations and experiences captured from selected participants through recorded notes on specific obstacles and desired solutions.

Chapter 6: Presentation of the Quantitative Findings

It offered the results of the survey questionnaires as distributed and completed by the participants and submitted to the researcher in sourcing data and information. The researcher also used descriptive and inferential statistical analysis to source data.

Chapter 7: Comparison of Qualitative and Quantitative Research Findings

It provided the comparison results from the qualitative and quantitative research findings as outlined in the chapter 5 and 6 of this study.

Chapter 8: Recommendations and Conclusions

It offered a number of recommended solutions from the identified obstacles or challenges as indicated in the research study. It also highlighted the conclusions of the study by outlining chapters as stated in the research study.

REFERENCES

- Angural, J. S. (2017). Use of Cronbach's alpha in dental research. *Medical Research Chronicles*, 4 (3): 285-291.
- Arain, S.M. (2014). *Woman police unfurled in Pakistan perspective, status and prospective*. Latifabad: Saima Sindh Publishing.
- Archbold, C.A. (2013). *Policing*. Los Angeles: SAGE.
- Atlas, R.I. (2013). *21st Century security and CPTED: Designing for critical infrastructure protection and crime prevention*, (2th ed.). Boca Raton: CRC Press.
- Babbie, E. (2007). *Crime Prevention: The Law Enforcement Officer's Practical Guide*. Massachusetts: Jones and Bartlett.
- Babbie, E., Wagner, W, E. & Zaino, J. (2015). *Adventures in social research* (9th ed.). *Data analysis using IBM SPSS Statistics*. London: SAGE Publications.
- Baker, B. (2008). *Multi-Choice Policing in Africa*. Stockholm: Nordiska Afrikainstitutet, Uppsala.
- Baruch, Y. & Haltom, B, C. (2008). Survey response rate levels and trends in organisational research. *Human Relations, The Tavistock Institute*, 61 (8): 1139-1160.
- Bayley, D. H. (2011). *Et tu brute: Are police agencies managed better or worse than universities? Police Practice and Research*. Routledge Taylor & Francis Group. 12(4): 313-316.
- Bayley, D.H. (2006). *Police reform: Who done it?* New York: Oxford University Press.
- Beek, J.M. Gopfert & O. Steinberg, O.J. (2017). *Police in Africa: The street level view*. Cape Town: Oxford University Press.
- Berg, B.L. (2004). *Qualitative Research Methods for the Social Sciences*. (5th ed.). Boston: Pearson.

- Body-Gendrots, S. (2012). *Globalisation fear and security: The challenges for the cities north and south*. London: Palgrave Macmillan.
- Boone, H, N. & Boone, D, A. (2012). Analysing Likert data. *Journal of Extension*, 50 (2): 1-5.
- Brandl, S.G. (2018). *Police in America*. Los Angeles: SAGE Publications.
- Bressler, M.S. (2009). The Impact of Crime on Business: A Model for Prevention, Detection & Remedy. *Journal of Management and Marketing Research* 2(1), pp.12-20.
- Bullock, K. & Tilley, N. (2003). The role of research analysis: Lessons from the crime reduction programme. Problem-oriented policing from innovation to mainstream. *Crime Prevention Studies*. 15:147-181.
- Burger, B., & Muller, J. (2009). A theological reflection on the stories of police officers working under a new constitution, Studies University of Pretoria: *HTS Theologiese Studies / Theological*. 65 (1): 1-5.
- Burger, J. (2007). *Strategic perspectives on crime and policy in South Africa*. Pretoria: Van Schaik Publishers.
- Burger, J. (2011). *Strategic perspective on crime prevention and policing in South Africa*. Pretoria: Van Schaik Publishers.
- Bushnell, A., (2017). How to stop a crime wave. Institute of Public Affairs Review. *A Quarterly Review of Politics and Public Affairs*, 69(3):28-31.
- Byeon, J. Kim, I. & Lee, D. (2018). Protest and property crime: Political use of police resources and deterrence of crime. *Public Choice*. 175: 181-196.
- Chambliss, W. J., & Hass, A. Y. (2012). *Criminology: Connecting theory, research & practice*. New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Chaurasia, M.K. (2003). *Police training*. New Delhi: Northern Book Centre.
- Choi, K. & Lee, J. (2016). Citizen participation in community safety: A comparative study of community policing in South Korea and the UK. *Policing and Society*, 26(2): 165-184.

- City of Johannesburg. (2015). *The role of municipal by-laws in good local government in South Africa*. Johannesburg: City of Johannesburg.
- Clarke, R. V. (1997). *Situational Crime Prevention: Successful Case Studies*. (2nd ed.). Available at:
<http://www.popcenter.org/library/reading/pdfs/scp/2intro.pdf>. Accessed on 04 August 2020.
- Coester, M., Marks, E. & Meyer, A. (2008). *Qualification in crime prevention status report from European countries*. Monchengladbach: Forum Verlag, GMBH.
- Coetzee, E. (2020). South Africans go online to document police brutality. *Time lives*. Available At:<https://www.timeslive.co.za/news/south-africa/2020-08-04-south-africans-go-on-line-to-document-police-brutality/>. Accessed on 04 August 2020.
- Coleman, J.L. (2012). *Operational mid-level management for police*. Kansas: Charles C Thomas publisher, Ltd.
- Commins, S. (2018). *Africa Security Brief: From urban fragility to urban stability*. Washington: Africa Centre for Security Studies.
- Cordner, G.W. (2014). *Police administration*. Amsterdam: Anderson Publishing.
- Craythorne, D. L. (2006). *Municipal Administration: The Handbook*. (6th ed.). Pretoria: Juta.
- Creswell, J.W. (2009). *Research design: Qualitative, quantitative, and mixed methods approaches*. (3rd ed.) London: SAGE.
- Crime Statistics Gauteng, Pretoria. (2018). [Online] Available at: <http://crimestatssa.com/>. (Accessed on 25 May 2019).
- Crime Stats SA, Gauteng. (2018). [Online] Available at: <http://crimestatssa.com/> (accessed on: 25 May 2019).
- Darchen, S. & Simon G. (2018). When neighbourhoods become dangerous, look to local strengths for a lifeline. *The Conversation*. [Online]:

<https://theconversation.com/when-neighbourhoods-become-dangerous-look-to-local-strengths-for-a-lifeline-94418>. (Accessed on: 20 May 2021).

Davies, P., Francis, P. & Jupp, V. (2011). *Doing Criminological Research*. (2nd ed.). London: SAGE.

De Vos, A. S., Strydom, H., Fouche, C. B. & Delpont, C. S. L. (2011). *Research at grass roots: For the social science and human service profession*. (4th ed.). Van Schaik Publisher.

Denscombe, M. (2002), *Ground rules for good research: A 10 point guide for social researchers*. Philadelphia: Open University Press.

Department of Justice, South Africa. (1977). *Criminal Procedure Act 51 of 1977*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Justice. South Africa. (1993). *The interim Constitution of the Republic of South Africa, Act No. 200 of 1993*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Justice. South Africa. (1996). *The Constitution of the Republic of South Africa Act, No. 108 of 1996*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Justice, South Africa. (1996). *The Constitution of the Republic of South Africa Act, No. 108 of 1996*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Justice, South Africa. (1998). *White Paper on Safety and Security*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Labour, South Africa. (1995). *Labour Relations Act 66 of 1995*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Local Government, South Africa. (1982). *The Black Local Authorities Act, 102 of 1982*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Public Service, South Africa. (2000). *Municipal Systems Act 32 of (2000)*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

Department of Safety and Security, South Africa (1998). *White Paper on Safety and Security*. Pretoria: Government Printers.

- Department of Safety and Security, South Africa. (1995). *Act 68 of 1995*. Pretoria: Government Printers.
- Department of Safety and Security, South Africa. (1996). *National Crime Prevention Strategy*. Pretoria: Government Printers.
- Department of Safety and Security, South Africa. (1998). South African Police Service Amendment Act, 83/1998. (General Notice 1387 of 1998) *Government Gazette*: 400 (19407) 28 October.
- Department of Safety and Security. (2011). *Independent Police Investigative Directorate Act No.1 of 2011*. Pretoria: Government Printers.
- Department of Transport, South Africa. (1996). *National Road Traffic Act No. 93 11996*. Pretoria: Government Printers.
- Duignan, P. & Gann, L.H. (1991). *Hope for South Africa*. California: Hoover Institution Press.
- Ekurhuleni Metropolitan Municipality. (2019). *Budget Speech of 2019-2020*. Ekurhuleni: Ekurhuleni City Council.
- Ekurhuleni Metropolitan Municipality. (2019). *Municipal by-law regulation. City of Ekurhuleni of 2019*. Ekurhuleni: Ekurhuleni City Council.
- Emerson, R, W. (2017). Department of Blindness and Low Vision Studies, Western Michigan University, 1903 Avenue, Kalamazoo. *Journal Indexing & Metrics*, 111 (2): 193–196.
- Emerson, R.G. (2020). Who Is the Citizen Security? *Latin American Research Review*, 55 (3): 529-543.
- Farmer, D.J. (1984). *Crime control, the use and misuse of police resources, 1984*. New York: 1984 Plenum Press.
- Felson, M. & Boba, R. (2010). *Crime and everyday life*. (4th ed.). Thousand Oaks, London: SAGE.
- Fenelly, L.J. (2012). *Handbook loss prevention and crime prevention*. (7th ed.). London: SAGE.

- Fennelly, L.J. (2004). *Handbook of loss prevention and crime prevention*. (4th ed.). Oxford: Butterworth-Heinemann.
- Fisher, G. (2007). *Community policing explained: A guide for Local Government*. New York: COPS.
- Fox, W., Van Wyk. & Fourie, M. (1998). *Police Management in South Africa*. Kenwyn: Juta & Co, Ltd.
- Frankel, P. (2019). Municipal police and organised crime: case study of Michoacán, Mexico. *Luris, Q*, 12 (2): 225-239.
- Gastrow, P. (2001). The SADC Region: A Common Market for Criminals. *Africa Security Review*, 10 (4): 136-140.
- Gauteng Safety Strategy, South Africa. (2014). *Gauteng Safety Strategy of 2014*. Gauteng: Gauteng Provincial.
- Goba, N. (2017). TMPD Chief and City of Tshwane part ways. *Sunday Times*. 25 April:1.
- Gottschalk, P. (2008). *Knowledge management in policing enforcing law on criminal business enterprises*. New York: Hindawi Publishing Corporation.
- Guiele, R. Liebenberg, S. & Van Huyssten, E. (2007). Integrated Development Planning in South Africa: Lessons for international peace building? *African Journal on Conflict Resolution*, 7 (89):113-135.
- Hair, J, F. Jr, Black, W, C. Babin, B, J. & Anderson, R, E. (2019). *Multivariate Data Analysis, (8th ed.)*. New Jersey: Cengage Learning EMEA.
- Henning, E. (2004). *Finding your way in qualitative research*. Pretoria: Van Schaik.
- Hiss, D., Horner, B., Pressler, R., & Swanepoel, G. (2009). *FCS Principles of criminal justice L2*. Cape Town: Pearson Education.
- Huysamen, G.K. (2001). *Methodology for social and behavioral sciences*. Cape Town: Oxford University Press.

- Hyde, S. (2002). *Chief Superintendent. Training Development, West Yorkshire Police: Statement to author on 29 February Bloemfontein*. Wakefield: United Kingdom.
- Ishmail, S. (2020). Accusation of police brutality during raid in Athlone. *Cape Argus News*. Available at: <https://www.iol.co.za/capeargus/news/accusations-of-police-brutality-during-raid-in-athlone-4a62df07-a33e-44a8-8e8f-7969f7ba23a3/>. (Accessed on 05 August 2020).
- Jaftha, J. & Bawa, K. (2020). Should the municipal police have the same investigative powers as the SAPS. *Daily Maverick*. Available at: <http://www.dailymaverick.co.za/article/2020-05-14.Should-municipal-police-have-the-same-investigative-powers-as-the-SAPS/>. Accessed on 15 May 2020.
- Joburg Metropolitan Municipality. (2019). *Budget Speech of 2019-2020*. Joburg: Joburg City Council.
- Klockars, C.B. Ivkovic, S.K. & Haberfield, M.R. (2004). *The contours of police integrity*. Thousand Oaks: SAGE.
- Kole, O.J. (2015). Partnership policing between the South African Police Service and the private security industry in reducing crime in South Africa. Unpublished PHD thesis. Pretoria: University of South Africa.
- Kratcoski, P. C. & Das, K. (2007). *Police education and training in a global society*. Lanham: Lexington books.
- Krejcie, R.V. & Morgan, D, W. (1970). Determining Sample Size for Research Activities. *Educational and Psychological Measurement*, 30 (3): 607-610.
- Kuada, J. (2012). *Research Methodology: A project for university students*. Denmark: Samfunds Litteratur.
- Kuzmarov, J. (2012). *Modernising repression: Police training and national building in the American century*. Boston: University of Massachusetts.
- Lab, S.P. (2014). *Crime prevention, Approaching, Practices and Evaluations*. USA: Anderson Publishing.

- Lamb, G. (2018). Police militarisation and war on crimes in South Africa. *Journal of South African studies*. 44(5): 933-949.
- Landman, K & Liebermann, S. (2005). Planning against crime: Preventing people with people not barriers. *SA Crime Quarterly*. 21-26. ISS: Pretoria.
- Leedy, D. & Ormrod J.E. (2005). *The Practical Research Planning & Design*. (8th ed.). Upper Saddle River: Merrill Prentice Hall.
- Lewis-Beck, M.S., Bryman, A. & Liao, T.F. (2004). *The Sage Encyclopaedia of Social Research Methods*. Volume Number 3 Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications Available at:
<http://socialwork.journals.ac.za/pub/article/view/58> (Accessed on 12 March 2015).
- Local Government, Municipal Systems Act. (2000). *Act 32 of 2000*. Pretoria: Government Printers.
- Mabunda, D.Q. (2014). The challenges in establishing partnership policing in Soshanguve. Unpublished MA Dissertation, University of South Africa, Pretoria.
- Madihlaba, K. E. (2018). Challenges experienced by Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department on the execution of their crime prevention mandate. Unpublished MA Dissertation, Pretoria: University of South Africa.
- Magome, M. (2015). Cop forces to merge. *Pretoria News*. 19 August 2015: A1.
- Maisela, L. (2020). Criminal justice is killing us. *City Press*. 28 June: 4.
- Malherbe, N., Day, S., Cornell, J., Seedtat, M., & Suffla, S. (2020). Exploring police protests interactions, peace and conflict. *Journal of Peace Psychology*. Advance online publication. Available at:
<http://dx.doi.org/10.1037/pac0000441>. Accessed on the on 26 May 2020.
- Marzano, L. Smith, M. Long, M, Kisby, C. & Hawton, K. (2016). Police and suicide prevention, evaluation of training program. London, UK, *British Centre for Suicide Research*. 37 (3): 194-204.
- Mashego, A. (2020). Prosecutor's son 'messed up my life'. *City Press*. 28 June: 13.

- Masuku, S. & Maepa, T., (2004). City safety: Nelson Mandela Metro Municipality's crime reduction strategy. *Institute for Security Studies Monographs*, (103):1-124.
- Masuku, S. (2003). For better and for worse? South African crime trends in 2002. *SA Crime Quarterly*. 3 March 2003. ISS: Pretoria.
- Maxfield, M.G. & Babbie, E.R. (2012). *Basics of research methods for criminal justice and criminology*. (3rd ed.). Australian: Wadsworth Cengage.
- McDonald, J.R., (2015). Developing a peace course in police studies: how a culture of peace can enhance police legitimacy in a democratic society. Orlando, USA: *Journal of Peace Education*. 12 (1): 74-91. *Medical Research Chronicles*, 4 (3): 285-291.
- Memeza, M. & Rauch, J. (2000). City Government's Contribution to Urban Safety: A baseline report on developments in major South African cities: June 2000. Report prepared as part of the City Safety Project (funded by the Open Society Foundation for South Africa).
- Minnaar, A. & Ngoveni, P. (2004). The relationship between the South African Police Service and private security industry: Any role for outsourcing in the prevention of crime? *Acta Criminologica: South African Journal of Criminological*, 17(2):42-65.
- Minnaar, A. (2005). Private-Public Partnership: Private security, crime prevention and policing in South Africa. *Acta Criminologica: Southern African Journal of Criminology*, 18(1):85-114.
- Mkhabela, M. (2007). Peer Report Damns and Praises SA on Progress. *City Press*, 28 January: 8.
- Moatshe, R. (2017). Police chief suspended for defying Soca order. *IOL news*. 9 April. Available at: <https://www.iol.co.za/capetimes/news/police-chief-suspended-for-defying-soca-order-8570953>. Accessed on 6 June 2020.

- Mokoena, L. J. (2007). The Identification of a Municipal Policing Model for the Mangaung Municipality. Unpublished MA Dissertation, University of South Africa, Johannesburg.
- Montesh, M. (2011). Single public services versus single police: A case for the South African Police Service. [Online]: Available at: <http://hdl.handle.net/10500/5042> (accessed on: 22 March 2019).
- Morabito, A. & Greenberg, S. (2005). *Engaging the private sector to promote homeland security: Law enforcement private security partnerships Berea of justice assistance*. Available at: www.ojp.usdoj.gov/isja (Accessed on: 03 October 2019).
- Nardi, P.M. (2014). *Doing Survey Research: A Guide to Quantitative Methods*. (3rd ed.). London: Paradigm Publisher.
- Ncube, W. & Jeiroudi, N. (2020). Police brutality in South Africa and the usual rift in remedies representation and responsibility. *Daily Maverick*. Available: <https://www.dailymaverick.co.za/article/2020-07-20-police-brutality-in-south-africa-and-the-usual-rift-in-remedies-representation-and-responsibility/>. Access 04 July 2020.
- Newham, G. & Faull, A. (2011). Protector or predator? Tackling police corruption in South Africa. *Institute for Security Studies: Monograph No.182*. Brooklyn, Pretoria: open society foundation for South Africa.
- Newham, G. (2006). Getting into the City Beat: Challenges Facing Our Metro Police." Institute for Security Studies. *The South African Crime Quarterly*, (15): 1-5.
- Newham, G., Masuku, T., & Dlamini, J. (2006). *Diversity and transformation in the South African Police service: A study of police Perspective on a race, gender and community in the Johannesburg policing area*. Braamfotein: Colorpress (Pty) Ltd.
- Ochoa,J.I.A. & Torres, H.A.H., (2019). Municipal police and organised crime: The case of Michoacán, Mexico: *Quaestio Iuris*, 12(2): 225-239.

- Palmiotto, M. (2011). *Community policing: A police-citizen partnership*. London: Routledge.
- Petrow, S. (1998). Creating an orderly society: *The Hobart Municipal Police 1880-1889*.
- Pheiffer, D.C. (2013). An analysis of the role of the South African Police Service and the local government in crime prevention. Unpublished MPhil Dissertation, University of South Africa, Pretoria.
- Plant, J.B. & Scott, M.S., (2009). Effective policing and crime prevention: A problem-oriented guide for mayors, city managers, and country executives. Us Department of Justice, Office of Community Oriented Policing Services, 13:1-70.
- Poulin, K. C. & Nemeth, C.P. (2005). *Private security and public safety: A community-based approach*. Upper Saddle River, New Jersey: Prentice Hall.
- Pressler, J.S. Saner, Wasserfall, I. (2009). *FCS Criminal Justice Structures and Mandates L3*. Cape Town: Pearson Education.
- Rauch, J. (2001). Update on Municipal Policing (mid-2001): Report written for the Central of Study of Violence and Reconciliation. June.
- Rauch, J., Shaw, M. & Louw, A. (2001). Municipal Policing in South Africa: Development and Challenges. *Institute for Security Studies: Monograph No. 67*. Pretoria: Institute for Security Studies.
- Reisig, M.D. & Kane, R.J. (2014). *The Oxford handbook of police and policing*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Reynecke, F. & Fourie, M. (2001). *Police management beyond 2000*. Lansdowne: Juta & Co.
- Riekert, R. and De Vries, I., (2015). Strategic approaches to by-law enforcement as a means of crime prevention in the Tshwane metropolitan area. *Acta Criminologica: Southern African Journal of Criminology*. 5:99 -113.
- Roesch, R. Zapf, P.A. & Hart, S.D. (2010). *Forensic psychology and law*. New Jersey: John Wiley and sons, Inc.

- Rogers, C. (2006). *Crime Reduction Partnerships*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Rosenfeld, R. & Messner, S.F. (2013). *Crime and the economy*. Thousand Oaks, Los Angeles: SAGE.
- Rowe, M. (2020). *Policing the police challenge of democracy and accountability*. Bristol: University of Bristol pres.
- Safe City Community Safety and Crime Prevention Plan (2010-2013).nd. Available at:
[http://www.perth.wa.gov.au/sites/default/files/documents/SafeCity%20Community %20Safety.pdf](http://www.perth.wa.gov.au/sites/default/files/documents/SafeCity%20Community%20Safety.pdf). Accessed on 8 July 2020.
- Schneider, S. (2015). *Crime prevention theory and practice*. Boca Raton: CRC Press.
- Shaw, M. (2016). Please go home and build Africa: Criminalising immigrants in South Africa. *Journal of South African studies*. 42(5): 983 -998.
- Siegel, D, Bunt, H.G.V. & Zaitch, D., (2003). *Global organised crime trends and developments*. Rotterdam: Springer Science business media, B.V.
- Siegel, L.J. (2018). *Criminology: The core*. (7th ed.). Boston: Cengage Learning, INC.
- Subedi, D.S. (2016). Explanatory Sequential Mixed Method Design as the Third Research Community of Knowledge Claim. *American Journal of Educational Research*, 4 (7): 570-577.
- Sullivan, T.J. (2002). *Introduction to social problems*. (6th ed.). Washington, DC: Allyn & Bacon.
- Super, G. (2013). *Governing through crime in South Africa: The politics of race and class in neo-liberalisation regimes*. Cape Town: Ashgate Publishing Company.
- Tabachnick, B, G. & Fidell, L, S. (2014). *Using Multivariate Statistics*, (6th ed.). Boston: Pearson Education Limited.
- Tau, P. (2019). The pain of chase. *City Press*. 1 December: 6.

- Terril, R.J. (2015). *World Criminal Justice System: A comparative survey*. (9th ed.). New York: Routledge Publishing.
- Tshabalala, E.L. & Lombard, A. (2009). Community Partnership in the Integrated Development Plan: A case study of Govan Mbeki Municipality. *Journal of University of Pretoria*, 44(2):396-408.
- Tshwane Metro Police Department, City of Tshwane. (2013). *By-Law Policing Strategy. Tshwane of 2013*. Tshwane: Tshwane City Council.
- Tshwane Metro Police Department, City of Tshwane. (2013). *Road Policing Strategy. Tshwane of 2013*. Tshwane: Tshwane City Council.
- Tshwane Metropolitan Municipality. (2016). *Integrated Development Plan. City of Tshwane of 2016*. Tshwane: Tshwane City Council.
- Tshwane Metropolitan Municipality. (2019). *Budget Speech of 2019-2020*. Tshwane: Tshwane City Council.
- Ullah, F., Hussain, B. & Sajid, I.A., 2015. Intelligence Aspects in Police Basic Training and Countering Terrorism in Khyber Pakhtunkhwa, Pakistan. *Pakistan Journal of Criminology*. 7:1-101.
- Vadackumchery, J. (1999). *Police leadership the inside story*. New Delhi: A.P.H Publishing Corporation.
- Van Biljon, E. N. (2015). Exploring the meaning of crime prevention within the Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department. Unpublished MA Dissertation, Pretoria: University of South Africa.
- Verma, A., Das, D.K. & Abraham, M. (2013). *Global community policing: Problems and challenges*. London: CRC Press.
- Villiers, P. (2009). *Police and Policing, an introduction*. London: Waterside Press.
- Walker, S.E. & Archbold, C.A. (2020). *The new world of police accountability (3rd ed.)*. Los Angeles: Sage Publications, Inc.
- Welman, J. C. & Kruger, S. J. (2011). *Research Methodology*. (8th ed.). Cape Town: Oxford University Press Southern Africa.

- Wolvaard, I.W. (2007). *Improvement of service delivery in South African Police Service through electronic payment in the king William's Town community services centre*. Pretoria: University of South Africa.
- Zhu, Q. Alpcan, T. Panaous, E. Tambe, E. & Casesy, W. (2016). *Decision and game theory for security*, (7th international ed.). Games sec, New York, NY USA: November.
- Zulu, S. (2017). David Tembe steps down as JMPD Chief. *Eyewitness news*. 09 April. Available at: <https://ewn.co.za/2020/04/09/david-tembe-steps-down-as-jmpd-chief>. Accessed on 9 June 2020.

ANNEXURE A: UNISA ETHICAL CLEARANCE



UNISA CLAW ETHICS REVIEW COMMITTEE

Date 20200219

Reference: ST 1 of 2020
Applicant: KE Madihlaba

Dear KE Madihlaba

Decision: ETHICS APPROVAL
FROM 01 February 2020
TO 01 February 2023

Researcher: Mr. Kwapeng Elvis Madihlaba

Supervisor: Prof. O Kole

An analysis of the role of metropolitan police services in crime prevention in metropolitan municipalities: case study from Gauteng

Qualification: Doctor of Philosophy in Criminal Justice

Thank you for the application for research ethics clearance by the Unisa CLAW Ethics Review Committee for the above mentioned research. Ethics approval is granted for 3 years.

*The CLAW Ethics Review Committee reviewed the **low risk application** on 1 February 2020 in compliance with the Unisa Policy on Research Ethics and the Standard Operating Procedure on Research Ethics Risk Assessment. The decision was ratified by the committee.*

The proposed research may now commence with the provisions that:

1. The researcher(s) will ensure that the research project adheres to the values and principles expressed in the UNISA Policy on Research Ethics.
2. Any adverse circumstance arising in the undertaking of the research project that is relevant to the ethicality of the study should be communicated in writing to the CLAW Committee.



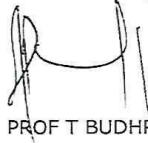
University of South Africa
Pretter Street, Muckleneuk Ridge, City of Tshwane
PO Box 392 UNISA 0003 South Africa
Telephone: +27 12 429 3111 Facsimile: +27 12 429 4150
www.unisa.ac.za

3. The researcher(s) will conduct the study according to the methods and procedures set out in the approved application.
4. Any changes that can affect the study-related risks for the research participants, particularly in terms of assurances made with regards to the protection of participants' privacy and the confidentiality of the data, should be reported to the Committee in writing, accompanied by a progress report.
5. The researcher will ensure that the research project adheres to any applicable national legislation, professional codes of conduct, institutional guidelines and scientific standards relevant to the specific field of study. Adherence to the following South African legislation is important, if applicable: Protection of Personal Information Act, no 4 of 2013; Children's act no 38 of 2005 and the National Health Act, no 61 of 2003.
6. Only de-identified research data may be used for secondary research purposes in future on condition that the research objectives are similar to those of the original research. Secondary use of identifiable human research data require additional ethics clearance.
7. No research activities may continue after the expiry date **1 February 2023**. Submission of a completed research ethics progress report will constitute an application for renewal of Ethics Research Committee approval.

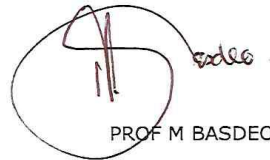
Note:

The reference number ST 1 of 2020 should be clearly indicated on all forms of communication with the intended research participants, as well as with the Committee.

Yours sincerely,



PROF T BUDHRAM
Chair of CLAW ERC
E-mail: budhrt@unisa.ac.za
Tel: (012) 433-9462



PROF M BASDEO
Executive Dean : CLAW
E-mail: MBasdeo@unisa.ac.za
Tel: (012) 429-8603

ANNEXURE B1: GATEKEEPERS PERMISSION (TMPD)



Community Safety Tshwane Metropolitan Police

Room B3 & B4 | 1st Floor | Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department | Head Office
Cnr WF Nkomo Street and E'skia Mphahlele Drive | Pretoria | 0002
PO Box 440 | Pretoria | 0001
Tel: 012 358 7003 / 012 358 1352
Email: seanb@tshwane.gov.za | www.tshwane.gov.za | www.facebook.com/CityOfTshwane



My ref:	MP9/3	Tel:	012 358 7003/1352
Your ref:		Fax:	
Contact person:	Director SIEE Bolhuis	Email:	seanb@tshwane.gov.za
Section/Unit:	Office of the Staff Officer		

Mr Elvis K. Madihlaba
(elvismad@tshwane.gov.za / Kwapenge@gmail.com)

1 June 2020

RECOMMENDATION FOR AN ACADEMIC STUDY TO BE CONDUCTED WITHIN THE TSHWANE METROPOLITAN POLICE DEPARTMENT

Title of Study: An analysis of the role of metropolitan police services in crime prevention in metropolitan municipalities: case study from Gauteng.

Institution: University of South Africa

Qualification: Doctor of Philosophy in Criminal Justice

An application in relation to the above-mentioned study has been received and has been appropriately reviewed. The study is directed towards identifying the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police departments operating in the Gauteng Province. It is envisioned that all Gauteng's metropolitan police departments will participate in this study. It is anticipated that the outcomes of this study will enable the metro police fraternity with recommendations on how contemporary challenges in relation to the crime prevention functionality of these departments can be addressed. The necessary ethical clearance has been obtained from the university concerned.

It is subsequently recommended that the study proceed, subjected to the following conditions:

1. The National Statement on Ethical Conduct in Human Research must be complied with for the duration of the study at the Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department.
2. Approval from the Office of the Chief of Police must be obtained prior to the formal release and / or publication of research material.

On request, this document can be provided in another official language.

Community Safety • UmNyango wezokuPhepha komPhakathi • Ndzawulo ya Vuhlayiseki bya Muganga • UMnyango Wezokuphepha Komphakathi • Kgoro ya Polokego ya Setšhaba • Lefapha la Polokesejo ya Setšhaba • Gemeenskapsveiligheid • Muhasho wa Tsireledzo ya Tshitshavha

RECOMMENDATION FOR AN ACADEMIC STUDY TO BE CONDUCTED WITHIN THE TSHWANE METROPOLITAN POLICE DEPARTMENT

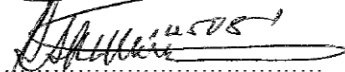
Mr Elvis K. Madihlaba

Recommended / Not Recommended / Recommended as Amended



.....
Director SIEE Bolhuis
Staff Officer: Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department

Approved / Rejected / Approved as Amended



.....
Lt-Gen. JM Nkomo
CHIEF OF POLICE: TSHWANE METRO POLICE DEPARTMENT

01/06/2020
.....
Date

ANNEXURE B2: GATEKEEPERS PERMISSION (EMPD)

MEMORANDUM



To : K E Madhlaba
cc : N Modibedi
(HoD: Human Resources)
From : I J Mapiyeye
(Chief of Police)
Date : 29 June 2020
Enq. : PL Pretorius
(A/D/Chief of Police -
Governance & Compliance)

Metropolitan Police Department
City House
Cnr Margaret Avenue and Long Street
Kempton Park
South Africa

Private Bag X 23
Kempton Park
1620

Tel : (011) 999-0188
Fax : (086) 692 8824
Website : www.ekurhuleni.gov.za
E-Mail: Isaac.Mapiyey@Ekurhuleni.gov.za

PERMISSION FOR RESEARCH INTERVIEWS – EMPD - ANALYSIS OF THE ROLE OF METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICES IN CRIME PREVENTION IN METROPOLITAN MUNICIPALITIES: CASE STUDY FROM GAUTENG

The subject heading refers.

The Department has no objections to the application. Please feel free to contact the Office of the Chief of Staff, to facilitate any interviews as per the application.

I trust this memorandum serves you well.

Yours Faithfully,

Signed Electronically

I J Mapiyeye

Acting Chief of Police
EMPD

ANNEXURE B3: GATEKEEPERS PERMISSION (JMPD)



City of Johannesburg
Department of Corporate & Shared Services
Office of the Group Head, Group Human Capital Management

8th Floor, B Block
Metropolitan Centre
158 Civic Boulevard
Braamfontein

PO Box 1049
Johannesburg
South Africa
2000

Tel +27(0) 11 407 6926
Fax +27(0) 11 338 1878
www.joburg.org.za

Memorandum

TO : Mr Kwapeng Elvis Madihlaba
UNISA
PHD (Criminal Justice)

FROM : Lineo P. Mabuse
Acting: Deputy Director: Employee Relations and Development

DATE : 3rd June 2020

SUBJECT : **RESPONSE ON THE REQUEST TO CONDUCT A RESEARCH ON
TOPIC "An analysis of the role of Metropolitan Police Service in Crime prevention in
Metropolitan Municipalities case study from Gauteng."**

The above matter refers to the letter received on the 2nd June 2020 in which a request was made to conduct a research in the City of Johannesburg.

I, Lineo Pat Mabuse as delegated authority of the City of Johannesburg Municipality (the City), hereby give permission to the primary researcher, Mr Kwapeng Elvis Madihlaba who is a student at UNISA, the following:

To collect and publish information about the City is publically not available, for the research project titled "**An analysis of the role of Metropolitan Police Service in Crime prevention in Metropolitan Municipalities case study from Gauteng.**"

- This authorization is based on mutual understanding that the City's name can be revealed in her/his project;
- The information provided by the employees or any other means (such as company's archived documents or reports) of the City is purely for academic purposes and cannot be used for any other purpose.

Please note that on completion of the study, a copy of the research report should be submitted to the City of Johannesburg in honour of your commitment.

The City of Johannesburg wishes you the best during the period of research.

Please do not hesitate to contact us if we can be of further assistance.

Kind Regards,

A handwritten signature in black ink, appearing to read "Lineo Mabuse".

Ms Lineo Pat Mabuse
Acting Deputy Director: Employee Relations and Development
Tel: (011) 407-7147
Email: Lineom@Joburg.org.za

ANNEXURE C: CONSENT FORM

AGREEMENT

I hereby consent to:

Being interviewed on the topic ***“AN ANALYSIS OF THE ROLE OF METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICE IN CRIME PREVENTION IN METROPOLITAN MUNICIPALITIES: CASE STUDY FROM GAUTENG”***

follow-up interviews if necessary:

- the interviews being recorded in writing or by using a tape recorder;
- the use of data derived from these interviews by the interviewer in a research report as he deems appropriate.

I also understand that:

- I am free to end my involvement or to cancel my consent to participate in the research at any time should I want to;
- Information rendered up to the point of my termination of participation could, however, still be used by the researcher;
- Anonymity is guaranteed by the researcher and data will under no circumstances be reported in such a way as to reveal my identity;
- I am free to determine that specific information that I reveal should not be recorded in writing;
- No reimbursement will be made by the researcher for information rendered or for my participation in this project;
- I will in no way derive any personal benefit from taking part in this research project;
- By signing this agreement I undertake to give honest answers to reasonable questions and not to mislead the researcher;
- I will receive the original copy of this agreement on signing it.

I hereby acknowledge that the researcher/interviewer:

- Discussed the aims and objectives of this research project with me;
- Informed me about the contents of this agreement;
- Explained the implications of my signing this agreement.

In co-signing this agreement the researcher undertakes to:

- Maintain confidentiality, anonymity, and privacy regarding the identity of the subject and information rendered by the interviewee.

(Interviewee signature)

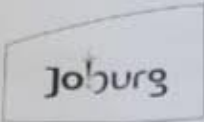
(Interviewer signature)

(Date)

(Date)

I, (interviewer signature) _____ certify that I explained the contents of the above document.

ANNEXURE D: PERMISSION FROM JMPD



City of Johannesburg
Municipal Metropolitan Police Department

Public Safety
125 Mendi Road
Nuthurst
Johannesburg
2012

PO Box 4000
Johannesburg
South Africa
2000

Tel: +27(0)11 700-9101
Fax: +27(0)11 700-9990
www.joburg.gov.za

08 June 2020

TO: Mr E K Madhlaba


RE: PERMISSION FOR RESEARCH INTERVIEWS IN JMPD

Please take note that the Johannesburg Metropolitan Police Department has granted you permission to do a research as per your request. You are free to contact the Office of the Chief of Police to facilitate any interviews as per your application.

Title of Study: An analysis of the role of Metropolitan Police Services in Crime Prevention in Metropolitan Municipalities: case study from Gauteng.

Institution: University of South Africa


Qualification: Doctor of Philosophy in Criminal Justice



Approved/ Not Approved

I S DLEPU
ACTING CHIEF OF POLICE
JOHANNESBURG METROPOLITAN POLICE DEPARTMENT

JMPD



To ensure a universal sense of safety and security

ANNEXURE E: LANGUAGE EDITING CERTIFICATE

EDITING AND PROOFREADING CERTIFICATE

7542 Galangal Street

Lotus Gardens

Pretoria

0008

06 January 2022

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN

This certificate serves to confirm that I have language edited the KE Madhlaba's thesis entitled, "**The Role of Metropolitan Police Department in Crime Prevention: Case Study From Gauteng.**"

I found the work easy and intriguing to read. Much of my editing basically dealt with obstructionist technical aspects of language, which could have otherwise compromised smooth reading as well as the sense of the information being conveyed. I hope that the work will be found to be of an acceptable standard. I am a member of Professional Editors' Guild.

Hereunder are my contact details:



Jack Chokwe (Mr)

Contact numbers: 072 214 5489

jackchokwe@gmail.com

Professional
EDITORS
Guild

Jack Chokwe
Associate Member

Membership number: CHO001
Membership year: March 2021 to February 2022

076 471 6881
012 429 3327
jackchokwe@gmail.com
www.academicproeditor.com

www.editors.org.za



ANNEXURE F: INTERVIEWS SCHEDULE

SECTION A: INTERVIEW SCHEDULE

Interview number:

Date:

Time:

Place:

Section A: Biographical data

Age:

Race:

Gender:

Position:

Length of service:

Educational Qualifications:

Section B: Contribution to the study

1. What are the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating

by metro police officers in Gauteng?

2. What are the legal shortcomings for the metro police officers in preventing, combating and

reducing crime in South Africa?

3. What are the functions and responsibilities vested on metro police officers in crime

prevention?

4. Do metro police officers in South Africa require special legal powers to act in combating

crime?

5. What level of training is appropriate for the metro police officers to be effective in crime

prevention and is the current level of training adequate in equipping the metro police officers with the required knowledge for doing their job successfully?

6. Are there adequate resources and specialised services in the metro police departments that can enable them to combat and prevent crime in South Africa?

7. What would you recommend to be effective methods of metro police officers to be in helping the police to combat crime?

ANNEXURE G: PERMISSION LETTER

Name of recipient:

Company:

Address:

Date:

Dear Mr /Ms

RE: REQUEST FOR PERMISSION TO UNDERTAKE RESEARCH AT YOUR ORGANISATION

I would like to request permission for Mr Kwapeng Elvis Madihlaba (currently a PhD degree student with the Department of Criminal Justice Criminology and Security Management, School of Criminal Justice, College of Law at the University of South Africa) to undertake research at your organisation. The title of his research project is “AN ANALYSIS OF THE ROLE OF METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICES IN CRIME PREVENTION IN METROPOLITAN MUNICIPALITIES: CASE STUDY FROM GAUTENG”.

DESCRIPTION OF THE PROJECT

Efficiency, effectiveness and the need to analyse role of metropolitan police services in crime prevention in metropolitan municipalities of Gauteng.

PURPOSE OF THE RESEARCH

The purposes of the research study are as follows:

- to outline the obstacles that hamper effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng;
- to investigate the effectiveness of the laws regulating the metro police department in South Africa and determine the shortcomings relating to metro police services in combating and preventing crime;
- to investigate different functions being provided by metro police service that could be effective in preventing crime in Gauteng;
- to investigate powers and responsibilities required by metro police officers to be effective in crime combating;
- to identify required resources and training that could effectively assist metro police officers in performing crime prevention role in Gauteng Province; and
- to provide recommendations based on research findings for the better crime prevention and policing theory/model to deal with crime holistically between metro police divisions and SAPS.

RESEARCH METHODS THAT WILL BE USED TO COLLECT INFORMATION

The research methods that will be used in this study include the following:

- One-on-one interview with selected Directors, Chief of Police, Deputy Chief, Commanders, Senior Superintendent, and Superintendent. The interviews will be conducted on selected regional and specialised policing sections of which there will be fifteen (15) metro police officers from respective ranks. The interviews will be semi structured and with both closed and open-ended questions.
- Survey questionnaire will be designed and distributed to the Inspectors, Sergeants and Constables who are on daily basis confronted by this crime prevention challenges. Fifty (50) Self-administered questionnaires will be

distributed to 50 participants. They will be able to complete the questionnaires themselves, but the researcher will be available in case the respondents experience any problems or have any questions. The questionnaire will consist mainly of closed-ended questions where the respondents are given a number of choices to choose from. However, there will also be a few open-ended questions, which will allow the respondents

- to provide their own answers, ideas and perceptions/ opinions on the research problem.
- During the process of collecting data the researcher will ensure that the participants are free from any form of injury since this study presents no threat or potential danger to the participants. The researcher will also make sure that data that is collected is protected at all times. Data will be locked in a lockable cabinet where only the researcher will have access to it alone.

RELEVANCE/BENEFITS AND VALUES TO THE ORGANISATION

This would be one among the studies conducted in Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department.

- The Tshwane Metropolitan Police Department/Johannesburg Metropolitan Police/Ekurhuleni Metropolitan Police would, hopefully, will be guided by the findings in improving their operations.
- The research will highlight the role of metro police department in crime prevention in the metropolitan cities.
- The research will come up with the suggested solutions to the identified crime prevention obstacle.
- Consequences for not addressing the crime prevention barriers/ obstacles hindering Gauteng Metro Police Services (GMPS) to pursue their crime prevention role will be highlighted in this research.
- For Unisa, it is planned that the research result could possibly be inputted into future study material of the Programme of Security Management in the

School of Criminal Justice, in the department of Criminology and Security Science.

Once permission is granted Mr Madihlaba would then be in touch with you or representative of your organisation for the scheduling of interviews or administering of the research questionnaire with relevant employees in the organisation.

All the information that is received from the participants will be treated with utmost confidentiality (i.e. participants will remain anonymous and no reference will be made to their identity or of the organisation for which they work. Organisations and personal names will not be used in this research report, and participation in the research interviews will also be in voluntary basis).

The final thesis (research report) once accepted will be placed in the Unisa Library and therefore in the public domain and can be accessed by interested parties. If any confirmation or other information is needed, I can be personally contacted on the telephone and cell numbers and e-mail address outlined:

Thanking you

Regards

..... (Prof)

Deputy Executive Dean

Associate Professor: Criminal Justice

College of Law

University of South Africa

Tel: 012 429 8344 (PA)

Or 012 429 8305 (direct)

Email: Koleoj@unisa.ac.za

Cell: 082 253 4882

Mr KE Madihlaba can also be directly contacted at the following:

Cell: 079 9912 973 or 012 358 0921 (work)

Email: Elvismad@tshwane.gov.za or Kwapenge@gmail.com

ANNEXURE H: SURVEY QUESTIONNAIRE

Research Project: An Analysis of the Role of Metropolitan Police Services in Crime Prevention in Metropolitan Municipalities: Case Study from Gauteng

Instructions:

Please answer all the following questions as honestly as possible. The information gathered for this study will assist the researcher in recommending solutions to the role of metropolitan police services in crime prevention in metropolitan municipalities: case study from Gauteng. You do not need to identify yourself and, similarly, the researcher will uphold anonymity in that there will be no possibility of any respondent being identified or linked in any way in the research findings in the final research report. Where required, please indicate your answer with a cross (X) in the box provided or write a response in the space provided.

NB: If there is not enough space below for your response, you can attach a separate page, writing a question number then your answer.

SURVEY QUESTIONS:

SECTION A (Demographic information)

The following questions are for statistical purposes only:

1. Gender:

Male	1	
Female	2	

2. Age:

16-20 years	1	
21-25 years	2	
26-30 years	3	
31-35 years	4	
36-40 years	5	
41-45 years	6	
46-50 years	7	
51 years and above	8	

3. Race:

Black	1	
Asian (other than Indians)	2	
Coloured	3	
Indian	4	
White	5	

4. What is your highest education qualification?

Standard 8/ Grade 10 and below	1	
Standard 9/Grade 11	2	
Standard 10/Grade 12	3	
Certificate	4	
Diploma (1 year)	5	
Diploma (2 years)	6	
Diploma (3 years)	7	
Advance diploma	8	
Degree	9	

Postgraduate degree	10	
---------------------	----	--

5. Have you worked in Municipal Police before?

Yes	1	
No	2	

6. How long have you been working in municipal police?

Less than 1 year	1	
1-2 years	2	
3-5 years	3	
6-10 years	4	
11-15 years	5	
16-20 years	6	
More than 20 years	7	

7. What is your current position/rank?

Position		
Chief of Police	1	
Deputy Chief of Police	2	
Director	3	
Commander	4	
Chief/Senior Superintended	5	
Superintended	6	
Inspector	7	
Sergeant	8	
Constable	9	
Warden	10	

SECTION B (Research questions)

8. Indicate the level of extent that you think are the following barriers/obstacles hampering effective crime prevention, reduction and combating by metro police officers in Gauteng?

	[Barriers/Obstacles]	Not to an extent at	To a little extent	To some extent	To a large	To a very large extent
A	Legislative restrictions and limitations on powers and functions of metro police	1	2	3	4	5
B	Lack of necessary and optimal police resources	1	2	3	4	5
C	Control and management of metro police by non-police executive such as Municipal Manager	1	2	3	4	5
D	Lack of proper policing skills and development on crime prevention	1	2	3	4	5
E	Poor in-service training	1	2	3	4	5
F	Unfair and unjust recruitment selection process on new metro police recruits	1	2	3	4	5
G	Duplication of policing functions of metro police with SAPS functions	1	2	3	4	5
H	Political interference and	1	2	3	4	5

	influence on operations and administration					
I	Short period of training by unqualified trainers	1	2	3	4	5
J	Teaching of outdated curriculum at the police college	1	2	3	4	5
K	Lack of signed metro police operational policies and plans	1	2	3	4	5
L	Lack of investigation powers by metro police	1	2	3	4	5
M	Lack of preservation of evidence and cases in court of law	1	2	3	4	5
N	Other (specify)	1	2	3	4	5

9. Have these barriers/obstacles negatively affected metro police officers during execution of their crime prevention duties?

Yes	1	
No	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

10. Indicate the level of extent the following solutions if put forward could address barriers/obstacles affecting metro police officers during execution of their crime prevention roles?

	[Solutions]	Not to an extent at all	To a little extent	To some extent	To a large extent	To a very large extent
a	Draft new regulation that will give additional powers to metro police on crime prevention role	1	2	3	4	5
b	Provision of optimal police resources	1	2	3	4	5
c	Authority over metro police by a well-trained top metro police executive	1	2	3	4	5
d	Related metro police operational and development skills on police standard, behaviour, discipline, management and interpersonal skills	1	2	3	4	5
e	Up-to-date in-service training on crowd control, police standard, deployment strategy, police attitude, professionalism and investigative skills	1	2	3	4	5
f	Transparent and fair recruitment selection on the new municipal police officers	1	2	3	4	5
g	Clear separation of powers between SAPS and metro police service	1	2	3	4	5
h	Independent regulation	1	2	3	4	5

	protecting metro police on political interference and influence					
i	Intensive police training period as specified by SAPS Act	1	2	3	4	5
j	Up to date metro police curriculum on teaching and training	1	2	3	4	5
k	Endorsed metro police operational policies and procedures	1	2	3	4	5
l	Regulation enabling metro police to investigate and collect evidence on crime committed in their municipal jurisdiction	1	2	3	4	5
m	Clear metro police policies and procedures on promotions	1	2	3	4	5
n	Other (specify)	1	2	3	4	5

11. Are the above solutions adequate to address the barriers/obstacles that are hampering metro police officers from combating crime?

Yes	1	
No	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....

12. Indicate the level of extent that you think are the functions and responsibilities of metro police service in crime prevention?

	[Roles]	Not to an extent at all	To a little extent	To some extent	To a large extent	To a very large extent
A	Patrolling the streets	1	2	3	4	5
B	Writing traffic fines	1	2	3	4	5
C	Issuing of road traffic and by-laws notices	1	2	3	4	5
D	Observing of accidents	1	2	3	4	5
E	Control and monitoring of road traffic flow	1	2	3	4	5
F	Confiscating of hawker's goods	1	2	3	4	5
G	Checking of business licenses	1	2	3	4	5
H	Attending of noise complaint	1	2	3	4	5
I	Attending of selling goods without license	1	2	3	4	5
j	Controlling of crowd in service	1	2	3	4	5

	delivery, unrest and strike situation					
K	Arresting and detaining of a suspect	1	2	3	4	5
L	Investigation of serious crime	1	2	3	4	5
M	Preservation of evidence in court	1	2	3	4	5
N	Conducting perimeter and building patrols	1	2	3	4	5
O	Executing access control at access points	1	2	3	4	5
P	Conducting potential crime risk, and threat analysis	1	2	3	4	5
Q	Providing security awareness campaigns	1	2	3	4	5
R	Collecting crime statistics	1	2	3	4	5
S	Identifying crime hot-spots	1	2	3	4	5
T	Any other (specify)	1	2	3	4	5

13. What roles/additional roles performed by the South African Police Service (SAPS) do you think metro police can perform in order for SAPS to concentrate their efforts on crime investigation and crime intelligence role effectively?

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

16. Do you think formal partnership between South African Police Service and metro police service can work effectively in crime combating and prevention?

YES	1	
NO	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....

.....

.....

.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....

.....

.....

.....

18. Indicate your level of metro police training and its duration that you have undergone?

	[Crime prevention training and duration]	0 - 5 days	Every month	2 - 3 months	4 - 6 months	6 - 12 months	Over a year
a	National Road Traffic training	0	1	2	3	4	5
b	Point duty training	0	1	2	3	4	5
c	Crime prevention training	0	1	2	3	4	5
d	Firearm training	0	1	2	3	4	5
e	By-laws enforcement	0	1	2	3	4	5

	training						
f	Visible policing training	0	1	2	3	4	5
g	Docket training	0	1	2	3	4	5
h	Tactical defence training	0	1	2	3	4	5
i	Drugs and Nicotine combating training	0	1	2	3	4	5
j	Aarto training	0	1	2	3	4	5
k	Road policing training	0	1	2	3	4	5
l	Domestic violence training	0	1	2	3	4	5
m	Motor vehicle systematic training	0	1	2	3	4	5
n	Stop and approach training	0	1	2	3	4	5
o	Traffic offence control training	0	1	2	3	4	5
p	Report writing training	0	1	2	3	4	5
q	Accident attendance training	0	1	2	3	4	5
r	Police procedures and standards training	0	1	2	3	4	5
s	National road traffic regulation training	0	1	2	3	4	5
t	Computer training course	0	1	2	3	4	5
u	Anti-corruption course	0	1	2	3	4	5
v	Other (specify)	0	1	2	3	4	5

19. Is your level of metro police training effective and adequate to enable you to combat crime effectively?

YES	1	
NO	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

20. Indicate the level of extent to which the following crime prevention training are conducted in your unit?

	[Crime prevention training]	Not to an extent at all	To a little extent	To some extent	To a large extent	To a very large extent
a	Rail and port crime prevention training	1	2	3	4	5
b	Crime prevention training	1	2	3	4	5
c	Drug and Nicotine combating training	1	2	3	4	5
d	Firearm and ammunition training	1	2	3	4	5
e	Municipal by-laws enforcement training	1	2	3	4	5
f	High speed chase vehicle training	1	2	3	4	5
g	Riot and crowd control training	1	2	3	4	5
h	Police defensive technique training	1	2	3	4	5
i	Drugs and Nicotine combating training	1	2	3	4	5
j	Police tactical respond training	1	2	3	4	5
k	Dockets training	1	2	3	4	5
l	Police tracing and profiling training	1	2	3	4	5
m	Social crime prevention training	1	2	3	4	5

n	Stop and approach training	1	2	3	4	5
o	Dangerous Weapons training	1	2	3	4	5
p	Radio Procedure training	1	2	3	4	5
q	Crime intelligence training	1	2	3	4	5
r	Visible policing training	1	2	3	4	5
s	Assets identification training	1	2	3	4	5
t	Training on attacks on police officers	1	2	3	4	5
u	Anti-corruption course	1	2	3	4	5
v	Other (specify)	1	2	3	4	5

21. In your own opinion, is metro police training of acceptable standards so that it can enable the metro police officers to prevent crime effectively?

YES	1	
NO	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

22. In your own opinion, what would be acceptable level of training required by the metro police officers in preventing criminal activity in support of the other law enforcement agencies?

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

23. Tick the relevant resources and specialised services in the metro police departments that can enable them to combat and prevent crime effectively in South Africa.

RESOURCES	Tick	SPECIALISED SERVICES	Tick
a. Specialised trained crime detectors		a. Riot and crowd control division	
b. Vehicles		b. Drug and Nicotine combating unit	
c. Advanced radio devices		c. By-law enforcement unit	

d. Advanced bullet resistant vests		d. Rail and port prevention division	
e. Office space		e. Visible policing unit	
f. Handcuffs and baton		f. Highway patrol unit	
f. Additional manpower		g. Municipal security patrol unit	
g. Firearms and ammunitions		h. Crime prevention through environmental design unit	
h. Budget allocations		i. High chase vehicle unit	
j. Enough body shields		j. Stolen vehicle unit	
k. Police vehicles with advanced camera system		k. Murder and robbery unit	
l. uniform		l. Municipal property hijacking unit	
m. Advanced computer technology system		m. Crime intelligent unit	
n. Special metal detector scanners		n. Social crime prevention unit	
Other			

SECTION C (Additional powers and functions for metro police officers)

24. To what extent do you think metro police should be given extra-legal powers to help SAPS to prevent crime in the community? [Read the following statements, and on a scale of 1 (strongly agree), 2 (agree), 3 (neutral) 4 (disagree) and 5 (strongly disagree)]

	[Statement]	Strongly agree	Agree	Neutral	Disagree	Strongly disagree
A	Powers to do stop and search members of the public when suspecting them to be in possession of any unauthorized goods and items suspected to have been stolen or used in suspected crime	1	2	3	4	5
B	Powers of arrest with warrant	1	2	3	4	5
C	Powers to arrest without warrant on any offence committed under any crime schedule	1	2	3	4	5
D	To be given powers to investigate crimes committed in their juristic area	1	2	3	4	5
E	To be given powers to preserve/store evidence recovered at the scene of crime	1	2	3	4	5
F	Powers to conduct crime prevention operations without getting authority from police minister	1	2	3	4	5
G	Powers to establish crime intelligence unit	1	2	3	4	5

H	Powers to be able to formulate drug and narcotic crime prevention unit	1	2	3	4	5
I	Powers to administer motor vehicle accidents within the municipality for purpose of statistics	1	2	3	4	5
J	Powers of conducting security risk assessment and crime statistic	1	2	3	4	5
K	Powers to be independent from political interference and influence					
L	Other (specify)	1	2	3	4	5

25. In your opinion how do SAPS perceive/understand the role of metro police officers in preventing crime to be?

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

SECTION D (Legislation)

26. Do you have clear knowledge of the contents of the Act (South African Police Service Act No 68 of 1995 and South African Police Service Amendment Act No 83 of 1998) which regulate the metro police in South Africa?

Yes	1	
No	2	

27. If yes, what in your opinion are the legal failures for the metro police officers in preventing, combating and reducing crime in South Africa?

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

SECTION E (Effective crime combating and prevention)

28. Do you think the South African police are effective in crime prevention?

Yes	1	
No	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

29. If crime prevention role were to be improved within SAPS, where do you think the improvements would be needed in police roles?

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

30. Do you think metro police are effective in preventing crime?

Yes	1	
No	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....
.....

.....
.....

31. Do you think it is ideal for metro police under the same minister as SAPS?

Yes	1	
No	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....
.....
.....
.....

32. If formal partnerships were to be established between the SAPS and the metro police service could you outline how you think this would work in practical terms?

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

33. Do the community understand the roles/functions of the metro police?

Yes	1	
No	2	

If yes, why do you say so?

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

If no, why do you say so?

.....

.....

.....

.....

34. To what extent in metro police do the roles of the following crime prevention programmes assist in crime prevention?

	[PARTNERSHIP ROLES]	Not to an extent at all	To a little extent	To some extent	To a large extent	To a very large extent
A	Community policing forum	1	2	3	4	5
B	Community safety initiatives	1	2	3	4	5
C	Security cluster forum	1	2	3	4	5

D	Sector policing initiatives	1	2	3	4	5
E	Business against crime	1	2	3	4	5
F	Other (specify)	1	2	3	4	5

35. What are the other additional roles of the following crime prevention programmes in crime prevention?

- Community policing forum

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

- Community safety initiatives

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

- Security cluster forum

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

- Business against crime

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

- Sector policing initiatives

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

- Private Security Industry

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

36. Any other comments

.....
.....
.....
.....
.....
.....
.....
.....
.....

THANK YOU FOR YOUR TIME IN PARTICIPATING IN THIS RESEARCH SURVEY

<u>OFFICE USE ONLY:</u>			
Questionnaire number			
Municipality			
Area number			
Consent form signed	Yes	No	

ANNEXURE I: TURNITIN REPORT



Digital Receipt

This receipt acknowledges that Turnitin received your paper. Below you will find the receipt information regarding your submission.

The first page of your submissions is displayed below.

Submission author: KWAPENG ELVIS MADHLABA
Assignment title: Complete dissertation/thesis for examination
Submission title: AN ANALYSIS OF THE ROLE OF METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVI...
File name: 2021.09.20.Madihlaba_Thesis_Final_1.docx
File size: 4.54M
Page count: 365
Word count: 81,251
Character count: 450,618
Submission date: 21-Sep-2021 09:51AM (UTC+0200)
Submission ID: 1653720812

